用法編

目 次

名	詞	••••••	1
1	名	詞の語順の原則	1
	1.1	色とその語順	1
2	名	詞類義語・関連語の語順(実例に基づく実証的観察)	9
3	名	詞連語の語順	
	3.1	心情・身体を表す場合	16
	3.2	名詞連語の語順(心情・身体以外のもの)	21
	3.3	学事関係	24
	3.4	ジャーナリズム関係	26
4	反	意語の語順	27
	4.1	this, that など	27
	4.2	here と there など	27
	4.3	home と abroad など	28
	4.4	in and out など	30
	4.5	imports and exports など	34
	4.6	land, sea, air など.	34
	4.7	back and forth など	36
	4.8	comego など	37
	4.9	その他	38
	4.10	外/内	41
	4.11	off and on など	42
5	衣	食住の語順と英語表現	47
	5.1	「食」が先行するもの	47
	5.2	「食」が中位にあるもの	51
	5.3	「食」が最後尾にあるもの	52
6	RE	EPEATITION(反復)	54
	6.1	【名詞】	54
	6.2	【人称代名詞】	55
	6.3	【名詞句】	56
	6.4	【形容詞】	56
	6.5	【副詞】	58
	6.6	【人称代名詞・助動詞・動詞】	58
	6.7	【文】	60
	6.8	【副詞】	61
	6.9	【前置詞】	62

	6.10	【接続詞】	63
7	「な	ど、その他」の表現	65
	7.1	what を用いたもの	65
	7.2	everything を用いたもの	66
	7.3	things like that を用いたもの	67
	7.4	others を用いたもの	67
動			
8	実践	銭的 Cognate Verb の諸相	
	8.1	build buildings など (97)	
	8.2	life is lived など (11)	
	8.3	The dancer will dance など (7)	75
	8.4	The rain is raining など (3)	75
	8.5	(まとめ)	76
9		+Noun	
1(-	pend 目的語 前置詞 ~	
	10.1	spend+時+at+(仕事、行動、本、楽器、映画)(9)	
	10.2	spend+金+for+名詞 (3)	
	10.3	spend+(時、金、章、願望、努力、自分)+in(~ing、動作名詞、状態、場所) (34)	
	10.4	spend+(時、金、生産、エネルギ)+on+(~ing、動作名詞、場所) (31)	
	10.5	spend+金+on and in+~ing / spend+金 oninonon ~ing、名詞 (2)	
	10.6	spend+day+over 名詞 (1)	
	10.7	spend+預金、財産+to-infinitive (2)	
	10.8	spend+時+with+人、帽子 (4)	
	10.9	spend+(時、金、章、願望、努力、自分)+ in (~ing、動作名詞、状態、場所) (34)	
	10.10	spend+(時、金、生産 、エネルギ)+on+(~ing, 動作名詞、場所) (31)	
	10.11	spend+金+on and in+~ing / spend+金 oninonon~ing、名詞 (2)	
	10.12	spend+day+over 名詞 (1)	
	10.13	spend+預金、財産+to-infinitive (2)	88
	10.14	spend+時+with+人、帽子 (4)	88
	10.15	in の特質	88
	10.16	on と in の特徴	
11	l S	+V+(prep.) up/down+N (一つのテータ)	
	11.1	(prep.) down (57)	
	11.2	(prep.) up (28)	
	11.3	(prep.) up and down+N (17)	101
	11.4	(prep.) down and up (3)	103
	11.5	まとめ	104

	have mostly to do with	
	fight with	
	動詞 land の実例 司	
	different from/different than/different to/different from~ to~/d	
from		
15.1	different than	119
15.2	different to	120
15.3	different from ~ to ~	121
15.4	difference from ~ to ~	121
15.5	different to ~ from ~	122
16	① of ~ kind(s)/sort(s), etc と②~ kind(s)/sort(s) of, etc	の形態比較
(kind	/sort, etc が種類、種族を表す場合)	127
	Adjective Phrase (形容詞句) としての in the past (期間)	
	可	
	名詞+前置詞+名詞(名詞は同一語)	
18.1	N+after+N (38)	
18.2		
18.3		
18.4	N+in+N (23)	137
18.5	N+on+N (6)	138
18.6	N+upon+N (9)	138
18.7	N+over+N (1)	138
18.8		
19	during/in/for/over the past/last years, etc	
19.1	during (17)	139
19.2	in (17)	140
19.3	for (9)	141
19.4	over (9)	142
19.5	まとめ	143
20	形態別 between/betwixt/ in between の諸相	146
20.1	BETWEEN	146
20.2	BETWIXT	152
20.3	IN (-) BETWEEN	153

名詞

1 名詞の語順の原則

- 意味的に重要度の高いもの(印象、現実感など)や最初に念頭に浮かんだものを最初に おく。
- 言語上重くて長いものを最後尾におく。
- 連続音の口調のよい順に並べる。
- set phrase として慣習的化しているものはその語順になる。

これは名詞に限らず他の品詞にも適用されます。

1.1 色とその語順

私のコーパスの色の先頭にある white、black、red、green、grey(米 gray)、blue のイメージについて調べてみました。

三省堂『英語イメージ辞典』に、white は「聖性・無垢・死」。 ギリシャ・ローマでは喪服は中国と 同じく白色。キリスト教においては、浄化された魂、喜び、純粋さ、処女性、無垢などをあらわす。仏 教でも克己の完成、肉にたいする勝利。白と赤が組み合わされると悪魔と死。白旗は降服、友情、 善意。black は[凶・いまわしい・闇]。原初の暗闇、死、悪、虚空、絶望、腐敗、悲哀、黒魔術、喪な どの色。red は[血と火の色]。キリストの受難(passion)、信仰、愛、殉教をあらわす。 太陽と軍神の 色、性的興奮、怒り、喜び、健康、豊饒、多産、危険、炎、火、男性の色、色の極地。血の色、バラ の色。green は[若さと嫉妬と未熟]。 色彩 (as green as leek ニラネギのように)のほかには、「若くして 盛ん、なまの、未熟の、青白い(pale)。象徴としても両義的で、希望と生命力と歓喜ばかりか死と変 化と嫉妬をあらわす。grey(米語 gray)は[黒と白の中間]。顔色が「青ざめる」go gray, 「青い」は as gray as old ash。この日英の色彩感覚の相違に注意。gray はこのほか dull(どんより)、gloomy, somber, dismal (陰鬱な)、gray hairs 老年、ごま塩頭;gray area (中間の);gray wisdom 老練。死、悲 しみ、悔悟、中間状態の象徴。gold は[俗化の筆頭]。太陽と火、王、豊饒、不朽不滅、英知、心臓 などの象徴。錬金術では最高の金属。黄金の雨=太陽光線。金の枝=沈む。blue は赤池鉄氏: 『英語色彩の文化誌』に《青は海の青さでもあり、空の色でもある。また青は幸福、希望、誠実、沈 着、憂うつ、海洋、消極、沈着などを表わす色でもある。英米ではメーテルリンクの「青い鳥」が幸福 を、「青い血」(blue blood)が高貴な身分を表わす。「青い服を着る」(wear the blue)は身分の低いこ とを示し、blue nose が米俗語として、道徳的にひどく厳格なことを表わすのに対して、blue film のよ うな使い方もある》とあります。

色の語順についてコーパスにあるものを並べてみました。このことにより色の特徴の一端がわ かると思います。(数字は数)

まず対照語 white とblack を取り上げます。

[A] white と back の語順と実態 (28)

- a) white and black (8) [28.6%] 白人と黒人 (4)、清潔と不潔 (2)、雲の色 (1)、日本の女学生のストッキングの色 (1)
- b) black and white (20) [71.4%] 黒人と白人 (8)、善悪 (3)、絵画 (2)、テレビ (2)、ブチの犬 (2)、ネクタイ (1)、 チュダー王朝の建物 (1)、学者が着たガウン (1)

「黒色」は「不吉、死、絶望、悪、沈黙」などを表わすのは世界格国共通していて、英語でも a black cat は「暗黒、死」を象徴し、a black sheep は『もてあまし者』、Back Monday は「(休暇明け直後の) いやな月曜日」などを表わし、(「白色」は「純潔、無垢、清潔、清浄」を意味し a white lie は「罪のないうそ」を意味します)日本語では「黒白衣」 は僧侶の墨染(すみぞめ)の衣と、俗人の平常の服。転じて、僧侶と俗人。「黒白を争う」「黒白を弁ぜず」「黒白をつける」は是非、無罪の意味で、事の是非・正邪をはっきりさせる意味で使えますが。目を白黒させる」「白黒映画、白黒写真、白黒テレビ」といい白先行のこともあります。

アメリカの著名なジャナリスト、ライター、WCBS テレビの英語講師として活躍し、NHK の英語番組台本にも長く携わった Richard Goodman 氏は 随筆 "Watch What You Say"の中で black とwhite について次のように述べています。

"Traditionally, 'white' and 'black' have been associated with the words 'good' and 'bad.'
'Black' has sometimes been thought of as 'evil' 'His heart is black,' is an expression which is sometimes heard. Naturally, so-called 'black people' do not like being associated with a word that has a bad connotation. In the last several years, there has been a campaign to attempt to change this image. 'Black is beautiful,' is a popular slogan. Gradually the term is beginning to take on various good connotations.

'White' is used to suggest that a person is afraid: 'He was white with fear,' or, 'He turned white as a ghost (with fear).' 'He turned black (in he sun),' is used to show that a person got an extremely good suntan."

(いままで、白と黒は善と悪を連想させる言葉であった。黒は悪を連想させ"His heart is **black**,"「彼の心は邪悪だ」という言葉を耳にすることがあった。当然なことだが俗に言う黒人は黒が悪を暗示連想させることを好まない。この数年このようなイメージを払拭させる運動が行われた。"**Black** is beautiful,"「黒は美しい・すてきだ」が民衆の標語になり、黒はじょじょにさまざまなポジテブな意味に使われ始めている。白は恐怖を暗示するのに用いられる。「彼は恐怖で真っ青になった」[彼は恐怖で幽霊のように顔面蒼白になった] 黒は「彼は日向にいて皮膚が黒くなった」はたいへんよく日に焼けたことを表わすのに使われる])

英語の場合私のコーパスでは総数 28 例中 white 先行が 3 割弱、black 先行が 7 割強で black が多くなっています。Google でも双方の数は white and black が約 88,800,000 [42.2%], black and white が約 121,000,000[57,8%]でやはり black 先行が多いこと表わしています。

[B] 他の色 (101)

red が含まれているもの (67)

red, ... (red が先頭にあるもの) (59)

[red, white ... (31)]

a) red and white (24)

バラの色 (2)、椿の花 (2)、バスの色 (2)、コーネル大学の school colors (1)、サンタークローズの服 (1)、柔道の帯 (1)、赤と白ぶちの牛 (1)、サンザシの花 (1)、ヨット (1)、かまぼこ (1)、カスタード (1)、食堂のちょうちん(1)、チョコレートの箱に書かれた文字 (1)、船の帆 (1)、ヨーロッパ風アーチの建物 (1)、宮島の厳島神社 (1)、クリスマスツリー (1)、しめ飾りにつけたジグザグ型のおみくじ (1)、贈り物の箱にかけた紐 (1)、航空機の翼につけた点滅する光 (1) コカコーラのシンボルマーク (1)

- b) red, white, and blue (5) アメリカの国旗 (1)、ユニオンジャック (1)、花形腕章 (1)、ネクタイ (1)、船の帆 (1)
- c) red, white, and black (1) ナチス、カギ十字の腕章 (1)
- d) red, white and mauve (1) バラ (1)

[red, blue ... (13)]

a) red and blue (5)

寒さで変色した素足 (1)、シャツ (1)、郵便箱 (1)、製菓用縞模様の袋 (1)、 陶磁器 (1)

b) red, blue, and yellow (4)

primary colors (原色) (1)、少女の好む色 (1)、花 (1)、色の特性 (1)

(原文)Colors describe emotion: **red** for passion, **blue** for peace, **yellow** for cheerfulness.

———Jan McConnell, Communication Across Cultures

(赤は情熱、青は平和、黄は元気という感情、情動を表わす。)

(参考)primary colo(u)r について英米辞典の説明

(color はアメリカ英語、colour はイギリス英語)

red, yellow, and blue が基本ですがアメリカでは **green** も含まれるようです。 (LDCE 3)

- c) red and blue and yellow and pink (1) 旧約聖書(創世記)紙のお告げにより現れた最初に花 (1)
- d) red, blue, yellow, purple and orange (1) 様々な色彩の上着 (1)
- e) red and blue and green and yellow and white and pink (1)

王冠のきらめく宝石 (1)

f) streamers of the red and blue of Liechtenstein, crimson and white, silver and gold (1) 飾りリボン (1)

[red, yellow, ... (4)]

a) red, yellow, and blue (1)

三原色 (1)

Red, yellow and blue are the primary colors from which all other colors are blend.

——Joan McConnell, Communicating Across Cultures

(赤、黄、青はその他すべての色が混じり合っている三原色である。)

b) red, yellow and white (1)

遭難者を悼み海に投げ込む花輪の色 (1)

c) red, yellow, and orange (1)

北国の木の葉の変化 (1)

d) red, yellow, and purple (1)

横浜のチャイナタウン (1)

東京都のある鉄道踏切バーの色が白色と黄色だったのを白と赤色に塗り替えたところ事故が激減したということをテレビで報道していました。私のコーパスでも red and white は 24 例で red, white,...; red, white,...7 例を加えると 31 例となりますが、red, and yellow は 1 例もなく red, yellow...がわずか 4 例にとどまっています。白色と赤色は黄色と赤色よりもはるかに目をひきつける効果がることを表わしているように思われます。

[red, green, ... (4)]

a) red, blue, other colors (1) 卵に塗られたいろいろな色(復活祭で) (1)

b) reds and greens and blues (1)

絵画の色 (1)

c) red, green, blue, and yellow (1)

卵に塗られたいろいろな色(復活)(1)

d) red, green, orange, and violet (1)

ハチドリの羽の色 (1)

[red, black... (3)]

a) red and black (2)

昆虫の色 (1)、バッキンガム宮殿衛兵の服 (1)

b) Red, Black, Brown, and White (1)

頭髪による4人のあだ名 (1)

[その他(4)]

reds and browns (1)(染色)、red and orange (1)(カエデの木)、

red and gold (1)(ヨーマン看守の服)

dark red, dark green, gray or brown (1)(少女たちの制服)

... red (red が最後部にあるもの) (10)

- a) white and red (3)怒りの表情(顔が蒼白、それから赤くなる)(2)、ワイン(1)
- b) black and red (3)インク (2)、藁帽子についたリボン (1)
- c) blue and red (2)縞のネクタイ (1)、外国人の目と髪の色 (1)
- d) yellow and red (1) 鉛筆 (1)
- e) green, white and red (1) カトリック教の三位一体・三一神(緑:希望、白:信条、赤:慈悲) (1)

...red...(red が中間にあるもの) (8)

- a) black, red, blue and green (2) インク (2)
- b) white, red and black (1) 高層建築 (1)
- c) brown, deep red and yellow (1) スペインの国旗 (1)
- d) blond, brown, red or black hair (1) 西洋人の頭髪 (1)
- e) lavender, red, pink, or light green (1) ポロシャツ (1)
- f) purple, red, yellow (1) 哲学者アリストテレスの虹(3 色のみ) (1)
- g) green and red, orange and yellow (1) 10月の色 (1)
 - (原文)October is a month for beauty. October has, every shade of **green and red, orange** and yellow.

red が含まれていないもの (34)

[dark, ... (6)]

a) dark and sad (1)

日本での生活 (1)

b) dark and silent (1)

部屋の様子 (1)

c) darker and darker (1)

辺りの様子 (1)

d) dark and cold (1)

辺りの様子 (1)

e) dark and beautiful (1)

女性の目 (1)

f) dark and moonless (1)

ある夜の様子 (1)

[blue, ... (18)]

a) blue and white (9)

車 (2)、皿 (2)、有田焼き (1)、伊万里焼 (1)、台風の日の空模様 (1)、ハワイのカラフルな婦人服 (1)、海の波 (1)

b) blue and green (2)

鳥の羽 (1)、海底の色 (1)

c) blue, white, and green (2)

惑星の色 (2)

d) blue and black (2)

インク (2)

e) blue and yellow(1)

着物の色 (1)

f) blue and grey (1)

日本人男性の洋服の色 (1)

g) blue and clear and chilly (1)

大空 (1)

[green, ... (4)]

a) green and yellow (2)

鳩 (1)、青年の着ている服 (1)

b) green and blue (1)

壁についている電灯の光 (1)

c) green and gold (1)

ロンドン・ハロヅデパートのバッグ

[brown, ... (2)]

a) brown and yellow (2)

サハラ砂漠の砂の色 (1)、晩秋の葉の色 (1)

[grey, ... (4)]

- a) grey and white (1) 鳩の羽 (1)
- b) grey and dull (1) 夜明けの色 (1)
- c) grey, glum, gruff (1) 巨人の色 (1)
- d) grey, green, blue or brown (1) 西洋人の頭髪の色 (1)

[gold, ... (2)]

- a) gold and silver (1) 金めっきの蝶々の色 (1)
- b) gold and purple (1)ハンサムな青年の服装 (1)

red … (59)/… red (10)で前者が後者の 6 倍である。赤色は刺激が強く消防車、火災報知機、 交通信号機にも用いられています。色の語順として先頭に来ることの多いのもこのためであり、世 界共通の現象だと思われます。

red and white (24)/white and red (3)で 8 対 1 の割合になっている。日本語でも「紅白もち」「紅白歌合戦」「源平合戦」のように赤が先頭にくるので共通性があります。 red and white が、バラの色、椿の色、以外に多様なもの に使われているのに、white and red は「苦痛の表情・怒りで(顔が蒼白、それから赤くなった)」「ワイン」に限定されているのは面白い現象です。

black and red (3)/black, red, blue and green (1)はインクの色です。red and black などがないのは使用の歴史と用途が表されていてインクを表し、blue and black (2)と対照してみると興味ぶかい感じがします。

black と 類似の色 dark の場合は、上記の色は green, white and red(カトリック教の三位一体・三一神。緑:希望、白:信条、赤:慈悲)以外はだいたい色そのものを表す語を伴っているのに、象徴的意味を表す色を伴うことが多いようです。dark は色といっても他とは異質な印象を受けます。

blue ...が 18 例で red...につづいて多い。総計 101 例中 red の含まれたもの 67、red の含まれないもの 34 で red の含まれたものが多いことを表わしています。これは赤が最も刺激力の強い色である証であるように思われます。

上智大学名誉教授 Peter Milward 氏は日本についても造詣の深い著名な知日家ですが氏は red の色と英国との関連について下記のごとく述べています。

"From early childhood I had no doubt as to the national colour of England: it was **red**. In all my maps of the world not only little England, but her vast empire all over the world was coloured **red**. It was **red** not for Communism or revolution, but for the British Empire and the peace. It seemed only natural that England and her dominions should be **red**; but it never occurred to me to ask the question why."

(幼少時代から、イギリスの国の色が赤色だということに疑問を抱いたことはなかった。私の持っていたすべての地図には、小さいイギリスだけではなく、世界中のイギリスの巨大な帝国も赤く塗られていた。共産主義や革命を表わす赤でではなく、イギリス帝国と平和を表わしていた。イギリスとその領土が赤いのは、当然なことのように思われたが、なぜかをたずねることは、一度も頭に浮かんだことはなかった。)

戦前の地図には日本は「韓国・北朝鮮、台湾、サハリン(当時は樺太)、千島列島、南洋委任統治の島々」は赤く塗られていましたが、これもピーター教授の説に類似したところがあることに気がつきます。ついでですがソ連の国旗の赤色は「美しい」を意味することを NHK テレビ (1985 年 8 月 19 日の番組ウルトラアイ)で放映していたことが私のメモ帳に記されています。ついでに世界の国旗を調べてみますと、156カ国中赤色が含まれているのは 120カ国、ないのは 36カ国で、あるのは 70% (7 割)です。赤は血の色と関係があり革命や独立のために血を流した歴史を表わしているものが多く、いかに刺激性の強い色であるかを示しています。

Richard Goodman 氏は、"'**Red**' is an interesting color. It is quite often associated with embarrassment: 'He turned **red** when every one stared at him.' In addition, it is used to describe a person who is angry: 'He turned **red** with angry.' '**Red**' is used to describe almost any strong emotional feeling. An extreme case of love, for instance, might be described as: 'He turned **red** with passion.' Usually it suggests that blood has rushed to the face and made a person's complexion turn **red**."

(赤は面白い色である。それは当惑と関連のある場合が非常に多く「みなが彼を見つめたとき 赤面した」とか、怒った表情を表わし「彼は 怒って顔を赤らめた」という。赤はまたどんな感情表現 をも表わすのにも用いられる。極端な場合、例えば、恋をしたとき「熱情で顔を赤らめた」と言う。普 通血液が急に顔に流れ顔色を赤らめたことを暗示しています。)

2 名詞類義語・関連語の語順(実例に基づく実証的観察)

英語の語法研究を始めて 40 年以上になる。英文の随筆、小説, 論評、時事文など主として英字新聞、高校の副読本・大学の教材(共にネーテブスピーカーのもの) 460 冊余りの中で参考になるものをカードに書き込み、文体、統語、形態、意味論 その多種多様な分野にわたって分類してカード箱に入れるように心がけてきた。収集したカードの数は 4 万枚を越したが、この中今回の発表は「名詞類義語の語順」の項に入っているもののみを取り出し、それを改めて整理し分類したものである。

常日頃、英文に接している時に注意を引く個所にアンダーラインを施し、それを他日その英文と出典(作家・作品名、出版社名およびページなど)をカードに書き込み、また別の日にそれを項目ごとにカード箱に入れることを習慣にしていている。なほ時間と手間を省くために、カードにはアンダーライン前後の英文と、出典のページと番号のみを記し、別のノートに符合する番号を記した出典一覧表を作り必要なときに、改めて確認することにしている。長年手ををつけることなく放置された状態にあるため、大体の想像はついていても実態は曖昧であり取り出すときは不安と好奇に充ち、ちょうどパソコンの受信トレイを開くのと似通った気持ちを抱く。

今はコンピューター・CD-ROM の時代である。市販ものを利用すれば瞬時にして統計のとれる時代である。しかし、それぞれには一長一短あり千差万別の作家や出典のものの研究には未だ不十分な面が多いと聞く。その意味で私のものは私なりに語法研究の観点に立って収集したものであり、一つの資料として提示する。

名詞に限らず同義語・関連語が並列しているときは、一般的に先頭に置かれる語は、短いもの、基本的な語、重要度の高いもの(最初に年頭に浮かぶもの、印象や現実感の強いもの)が多い。一般に軽い要素は中間の位置に置かれ、長くて重い語が後尾に置かれる傾向があると言われている。 また強制やリズム(stress and rhythm)に影響されることもある。その他、話者と聴者の立場、いわばダイクセス(deixis)の関係によって左右されることもある。

カード箱の「名詞の語順の項」は、『類義語』と『反意語』の 2分野に別けられていて、今回のものは『類義語』の項を抜き出したものである。これを次の如く 6 つのジャンルに分類した。[A] 心・体・人生・喜怒哀楽など、[B]時・空間・金・努力など、[C]夢・思考・感覚など、[D]文化・歴史・慣習・趣味など、[E]貧困・犯罪・政治・言語など、[F]その他。(それぞれは別のハンドアウトに提示したが、連語句のみを提示したものが殆どで、前後の文例や出典は紙数の関係で載せる事がでずコンテクストを知る上に不十分な面があるのは残念である。また、連語として 1 例しかないなどあまり見受けないのものは割愛した。)

[A] 心·体·人生·喜怒哀楽など

先頭に置かれている語で多い順に並べると、peace (44)、love (33)、life (29)、mind (29)、heart (24)、body (18)、energy (9)、fun (8)、pain (8)、fear (8)、hope (6)、pride (6)、tremble (6)、

mood (5)、fear (5)、soul (4)、joy (4)、amazement (4)、shake (4)、embarrassment (3)で、以下は おのおの 2 例のもである。happiness、pleasure、goodwill、sweetness、wisdom、weep、toiling。

1 例しかないものは割愛した。以上ここでは peace、love、life、mind、heart、body、energy などが上位を占めている。この中、成句化していると思われるものとして、mind and spirit、mind(s) and heart(s)がおのおの 8 例、mind and soul が 3 例ある。heart については、heart and mind 9 例、heart and soul 5 例、body は body and soul 8 例がある。これを語順の視点から国語辞典に記述されているものと比べてみると「心身・心神」は、『広辞苑』「学研・国語大辞典』 など全てのものに記されている。

また『日本国語大辞典(2 版)』「大辞林』「大辞泉』など「身心・神心」も併記しているものもある。双方にはニューアンスの違いがあるようだが、国語辞典でみる限り「心身・心神」の方が一般的に多用されている印象を受ける。私の場合は、ハンドアウトに記した如く、語順が[心身・心神]にあたるものとしては mind and body (2)、mind and soul (3)、mind, soul and body (1)、mind, body, feelings and affairs (1)、mind, brains and hearts (1)、hearts and soul (5)、heart and soul and energies (1)、heart and spirit (1)、soul and body (2)、計 17。また「身心・神心」に相当するものは、body and soul (8)、in body and in soul (1)、in body and spirit (2)、in body and in the spirit (2)、body and the mind (2)、body, mind and soul (1)、body, mind, and soul(1)、of body and mind (1)、soul and mind (1)、計 18 であり、双方の数は拮抗している。私のデータで見る限りでは、日英のこの句の frequency にはやや相違があるような印象を受ける。

この部門で目に付くのは、成句化していることの多い mind ...、heart ...、body ... は兎も角、peace、love、life や energy、fun、pain、fear で始まるものが多いことである。特に日ごろ意識はしていのだが、やはり peace、love、life は他よりも抜きんでている。成句と言える peace and quiet (9 例)が含まれていはいるが、他は関連語を並べたもので成句と言いきれるものは見あたらない。このことは、英語国民もやはり「平和、愛、生命や生活」の語をまず最初に言葉として口にすることの多いことを表わしている。彼らもこれらを最も大切な第一要素と考えていることの証であるように思われる。peace が後尾に置かれることは以外と少ない。私のコーパスでは別記した如く、friendship and peace、harmony、purity、beauty and peace、poverty and peace、prosperity、domination、and peace それぞれ 1 例しか見当たれない。shake、tremble、quake、quiver は相互に連結することが多い。

- a) hope and ... (6)は dream (2)、expectation (2)、happiness (1)、encouragement (1)、どれも未来志向の言葉である。
- b) peace and ... (44)は beauty、calm、quiet、dignity、honor、equality、enlightenment、good-will、gladness、friendship、happiness、order、good government、freedom、love、genuine morality、plenty、health、order、prosperity、justice、security、satisfaction、stability、tranquilityなどどれも穏やかのプラス志向の言葉が続いている。但し、上で述べたごとく、...peace のものもある。
- c) life and ... (29) that life and literature (5), life and experience (3), life and spirit (3), life

- and hope (2)、life and experiences (2)、life and culture (2)などは2例以上のもので life と結びつきの強いものと思われる。その他は各々1例のものは、activities、careers、customs, experience、joy、food、liberty、limb、motion、activity、change、production、soul、society、psychology、thoughts などがある。
- d) love and ...(33) は 2 例以上は love and marriage、love or money、love and respect、love and romance、love and happiness、love and care だけで、他はみな1 例しかない。 Affection、adventure、care for、despair、sex、death、faith、friendship、kindness、pain and sadness、patience、peace、power、mercy、tenderness、comfort、sacrifice、sorrow、thoughtfulness、armth、liking など。(序でながら、動詞の場合は 別紙 handout に記した如く、like ... love の語順になることが多いと思われる。このことは、f)の項のthought (thinking) ... feeling で述べる。)
- e) 別紙で示したように、「喜び、希望、慰安」などを表わす fun、joy、happiness、pleasure、delight、satisfaction、hope については、fun and ... (8)、joy and ... (4)、hope and ... (5)など先頭が短い語の場合は後続連結語も多いが、長い語で始るときは後続類似語は案外少ない傾向がある。この中 2 連語のものは、fun and enjoyment、happiness、energy and excitement、hopes and dreams、hopes...happiness である。
- f) energy (9)、fear (8)、pain (8)、mood (5)、amazement (4)などにはどれも、後続語と連語をなして成句化しているものは見当たらない。各々のものを並べると、energy and …は 1 例のみ、brashness、determination、discipline、enthusiasm、light、optimism and freedom、resources、vitality、vigor、fear and …は discouragement (2)以外に 1 例のものは、anger、anxiety、loathing、love、jealousy、anger、violence、wonderment pain and …は anguish、anxiety、grief、hostility and misunderstanding、sorrow、suffering、surprise 各 1 例。mood and …は emotions (2)、attitudes、atmosphere、feelings 各 々 1 例。amazement and … は、embarrassment、bewilderment、honor、terror 各 1 例。

[B] 時・空間・金・努力など

この部門で、(a) time ...、(b) ... time の語順として、(a)が 107、(b)が 23 例で両者の比率は 82.3%:17.7%で前者が圧倒的に多い。(1、2 例のものは割愛して 3 例以上のものをあげれば)(a)では、time and (or) money (23)、time and place (15)、time and effort(s) (15)、time and energy or energies (12)、time and spac (11)、time and patience (5)、time and age (4)、time and chance (4)、time and experience (4)、time and thought (4)、time and straw (3)、計 100 例。(b) は、space and time (7)、money and time (4)、place and time (4)。このことは、別のhandout に記した James Kirkup 氏の言葉、"In the north, 'time is money,' so you are expected to be punctual for business appointments or interview."の如く、「時間」に対する北欧社会の理念を表わしているように思われる。(a)では「時間と金」の結びつきが最も多く、次に「時間と場(所)」、「時間と努力」、「時間とエネルギ」、「時間と空間」、「時間と忍耐」などが続いている。しかし(b)のように time が後尾に置かれる場合もあり、特に space and time

(7) と time and space (11)は例外的に数が接近している。これは哲学、論理学、その他においても time と space は相対的に密接な関係にあることを示しているように思われる。

なお time を使わないが、この項と関連性がある space and silence が 4 例ある。 time や space に後続する語が silence であることを表わしている。

ここで、念のため time and ... が 1、2 例のものを並べてみる。

again, age, chance, circumstances, cost, date, experience, eternity, feeling, Flight Number, I, the hour, inclination, interest, labor, leisure, planning, life, opportunity, petrol, reflection, tide, trouble, use, world

[C] 夢・思考・感覚など

この部門では、thought(s) (41)、thinking (12)、計 53 例が最も多く、ideas(s) (45)、feeling(s) (14)、dreams (5)、lives and thoughts (1) となっている。thought(s)、thinking 及び idea(s) が先頭にくるものが他と比べて圧倒的に多い。

thought(s)…で最も多いのは、feeling(s)が続く thoughts and feelings (17)、thoughts, feelings, experiences and accidents (1)、thoughts, ideas, and feelings (1), thought and feeling (1)、計 20 例。

t hinking...では、thinking and feelings (3)、unthinking and unfeeling machine (1)

(但しこれは形容詞)、thinking or feeling (1)、計 5 例がある。しかし、feelings or thoughts (1)、feelings and thoughts (1)のように feelings が先行する場合も希にはある。別の英文のハンドアウト(実例・出典記載)では、動詞の場合 think and feel が 4 例、feel and think が 2 例ある。実例が少ないが名詞の場合と共通性があり実態の一面を表わしていると思われる。Thought (thinking) and feeling の語順が多い理由として次のようなことが考えられるであろう。feel の意味として OALD (4,5)は、"to have as an opinion; to think; to believe" とあり、WNWD (3)は、"to think or believe, often for unanalyzed or emotional reasons" と記載。Evans:C.Evans (DCAU) (1957)は、"Feel is often used as a synonymfor think." としながらも、"Much thinking, of course, is inseparable from feeling, in the sense of experiencing emotion, but the word should not be used in this way unless it is intended to convey the idea of strong emotion in the thought or a groping…towards a settled conviction." と言い、また、COBUID (2)は、feeling の意味として、"Feeling is a way of thinking and reacting to things which is emotional and spontaneous rather than logical and rational" と説明している。このことから、feel という語は think の意味領域の一部を占めていることがわかる。

[当学会 23 回大会]と[英語表現研究・Bulltein25 号]で述べた如く、類義語動詞の場合の語順として、 ${(抽象・一般語)+(具体・特殊語)}$ の配置が一般的であるが、これら thought (thinking)と feeling との関係も同じである。ただ、希には逆順の feelings and thoughts (thinking)のこともあるが、これはその時に述べた如くemotionalな含みがあり「異常・驚き・不審など」が背景に隠されている場合が多いのではないかと思われる。

ここで注目すべきは、idea は thought や feeling の類義語でありながらそれらと連句を成したものが私のコーパスには 1 例も見当たらないことである。前者と後者の 2 語はジャンルが異なるための現象であろうか。idea に続く語の内一番多いのは、culture の 9 例である。この語は「文化」との結びつきが強いことを示している。

[D] 文化・歴史・慣習・趣味など

先頭に置かれている語の多い順は、custom (29)、culture (12)、manner (9)、habits (5)、tastes(s) (5)、society (3)、history (2)、ways (2)となっている。社会的慣習を表わす customs で始まるものが 29 例で断然多い。一方連語の最後尾に力点が置かれる場合もあるので、customs が句尾にあるものを探すと、manners and customs (5)、culture and customs (3)、habits and customs (2)、tastes and customs (1) の 11 例で、句頭と句尾にあるものを加えると、40 例となる。一方、個人的習慣を意味する habits は、先頭のものは habits and customs (2)、habits and conducts (1)、habits and personalities(1)、habits and thinking (1)の 5 例、句尾にあるものは customs and habits の 5 例、計 10 例にすぎない。個人主義を第一の信条としながらも、社会的慣習を強く意識する英語国民の特性を表わしているように思われる。しかし、customs and habits (4)と habits and customs (2) は数が拮抗しているのはその二面性の表われかもしれない。

その他 2 例以上のものとして、customs と連結しているのは、habits 以外に、manners (10)、culture (6)、traditions (2)があり、culture は上述以外に society (4)、history (2)がある。それぞれの関連性を知る上に参考になる。

[E] 貧困・犯罪・政治・言語など

先頭に置かれている語の frequency の多い順に並べると、crime が断然トップ (27 例) である。 次に、words (18)、language (11)、politics (8)、rules (7)、stress (7)、law(s)、violence (5)、poverty (4)、hunger (4)、sin (1)と続く。crime の 27 例の内訳は、後に violence が続く crime and violence (7)、crime, violence and poverty (3)、crime, violence...drugs (2)及び他 3 例が計 15 例で一番多い。その他は、crime and fear (2)、crime and misery (2)、crime and unemployment (2)。1 例だけのものは 6 件で、計 12 例となっている。Violence の 5 例の内訳は、violence and crime、violence and destruction、violence, famine and death、violence and guns、violence and war それぞれ 1 例、計 5 例である。crime...と violence...の総計は 32 例になる。一方、politics...、rules...、poverty...、hunger...の総計は 22 例になる。このことは、犯罪の多い英語 国民社会の実相を示唆しているように見える。

language...(11)の内訳は、後に culture が続く language and culture (7)、 language, culture, and communication (1)、 language and communication (1)、 language and metaphor (1)、 language、 religion and cultural traditions (1)である。 「言語」は「文化」との結びつきが一番大きく、「コミュニケーション」、「メタフア」、「宗教」などとも連結することを表わしている。

words...(18)の内訳は、後に expressions と phrases が続く words and expressions (5)、words and phrases (5) が最も多く、word(s) and thought(s) (2)、words and actions (1)、words and gestures (1)、words, expressions and grammatical constructions (1)、words and ideas (1)、words, ideas, and sentence final particles (1)、words, idioms, interjections, and some grammatical features (1)が続いている。これは language のそれとはかなり様相が異なる。 language、words とも同じ[言語]に所属する語でありながら双方は意味領域が異なることを表わしている。

[F] その他

- wealth と riches とは類義語であるが、wealth…(8)の実態は、wealth and power (4)、 wealth and luxury (2)、wealth and leisure (1)、wealth, power and constitutional freedom (1)、一方 riches…(2)は riches—love—happiness (1)、riches and vitality (1)となっている。数が少ないので即断は出来ないのだが、wealth と「権力、奢侈」、riches と「愛、幸福、活力」が連鎖性があることを示しているか。
- (by) leaps and bounds (6)はよく見かける句である。Science and technology (10) と science and industry (1) はいずれも science が先に置かれているが、日英同じである。technology and communication (1)も参考になる。
- noise…は、noise and bustle (2)、noise and bustle and smog (1)、noise and banter (1)、noises and excitement (1)、noise and brutality and harshness (1)。noise の後には、「雑踏、スモッグ、興奮、からかい、残忍、無情」などマイナスイメジの語がくる事が多い。
- size(s)と shape(s)の関係。size(s)…(12)、shapes…(9) だが、size(s) and shape(s)が 8 例、 shape(s) and size(s)が 5 例あり数が拮抗している。その他、size, shape, and colour (2)、size, shape, colour and luster (1)、shapes and colours (1)、shapes, colours and size (1)、shape or form (1)である。双方とも意外に、後に colour(s)を伴うことが多い。
- knowledge...は 8 例、knowledge and understanding (4)、knowledge and experience (2)である。understanding または experience が連鎖している。
- ① radio(s)...(15)は全て television(s)が後続したものである。この television(s)の後には、 telephone(s) (3)、newspapers (2)と magazines (1)が続いている。また、phonograph, radio and television (1)は歴史的出現順になっている。
 - ② television...(9)は television and movies (1) 以外は 全て radio が後続している。
 - ③ newspaper(s).../press...(6) は、newspapers and television (3), newspapers, television, and radio (1)、the press and television and the wireless (1)、は「新聞・テレビ・ラジオ」 式で、press, radio and TV は1例に過ぎない。

以上①②③を総合すると、やはりラジオ・テレビの連結が多く、新聞・雑誌はそれに次ぐことが分かる。

- [G] art(s)...(7)は art and culture (2)、art and literature (2)、art, literature, music or architecture (1)、 art and poetry (1)、art and science (1)で、「芸術」は「文化」文学」「音楽」「詩」「科学」と連結することを示している。
- [H] freedom & liberty

freedom...(7) は freedom anddemocracy (2)、freedom and space (2)、freedom and independence (2)、freedom and fun (1)、liberty...(2)は Liberty! Freedom! (1)、liberty, freedom and justice (1)である。双方連結語が異なる。

辞書•参考文献

- 『広辞苑(4)』岩波書店(1997)
- 『学研国語大辞典(8)』学習研究社(1987)
- 『大辞林(2)』三省堂(1995)
- 『大辞泉』三省堂(1995)
- 『日本国語大辞典(2)』小学館(1976)
- COLLINS COBUILD ENGLISH DICTIONARY (New Edition)(1995)
- Oxford Advanced Learner's Dictionary (4? 5)
- Webster's New World Dictionary (3)(1988)
- Declerck, R., A Comprehensive Descriptive Grammar of English、開拓社(1994)
- Evans, E. & Evans, E., A Dictionary of Contemporary American Usage (1957)
- McMordie, W., English Idioms and How to Use them (1957)
- 安藤 貞雄『英語の論理・日本語の論理』大修館(1986)
- 池田拓郎『英語文体論』研究社(1992)
- 『英語語法大事典』大修館(1987)
- 中村保男『日英類義語表現辞典』三省堂(1998)
- 中村保男・谷田貝常夫『英和翻訳表現辞典』研究社(1984)
- 村田勇三郎『機能英文法』大修館(1981)
- 春田勝久『類義語の語順とその意味(動詞と副詞の場合)』(英語表現研究・第25号)

3 名詞連語の語順

3.1 心情・身体を表す場合

今回は表題のテーマで考えてみました。前後の文や句もカーデングしていますがスペースの 関係で割愛し、本体のみを抜き出しました。先行語に焦点を当てましたが、そのときとっさにひらめ いたもの、日ごろ心のすみでその価値、重要性、意味を認識していることだと思います。(カッコ内 の数字はその実例の数。原則として反義語を除く。)

[心情と身体]

- amazement
 - amazement and embarrassment (1) amazement and bewilderment (1) amazement and honor (1)
- body

body and soul (7) in body...in soul (1) body and mind (4) in body and in mind(1) of body and of mind (1) body, mind, and spirit (1) body, mind, and soul (1) body and strength (1) 19 例中 body and strength の 1 例以外はすべて「身体」と「心の」を対象にしたものばかりです。 双方がいかに密接な関係にあるかがわかります。

- comfort (4)
 - comfort and consolation (1) comfort and inner peace (1) comfort and luxury (1) comfort and reassurance (1)
- 当然なことですが心の和みを表す語が連結しています。
- dream (3)
 - dream and hope (1) dream(s), hopes(s) and emotion(s) (2) 人生は「夢」と「希望」は相関関係にあります。
- energy (7)
 - energy and brashness (1) energy and determination (1) energy and discipline(1) energy and enthusiasm(1) energy, optimism and freedom(1) energy and light(1) energy and resources(1) energy and vigor(1) エネルギーは「生意気・決意・修練・情熱・楽天・自由・光・資源・活力」などが伴う。
- envy (3)
 - envy and jealousy (1) envy, hatred and malice (1) envy, and frustration and anger (1) envy にはやはり「負の要素」が伴うようである。
- happiness (6)
 - happiness, energy, and excitement (1) happiness and fulfillment (1) happiness and peace (1) happiness, energy, and excitement (1)

happiness and patriotism (1) happiness, peace, and beauty (1) 勿論「正」の要素のみが連結している heart (28) heart and head (2) heart and life (1) hearts and lungs (1) heart (s) and minds(s) (13) heart, mind and money (1) in heart and in mind (1) heart and soul and energies heart and spirit (1) heart and soul (6) (1) the feelings in one's hearts and the ideas in one's minds (1) 28 例中身体と関連するのは heart and lung 一例だけである。同じ心情を表していても mind、 mental、soulとは意味的な相違があるのであろう。 (参考) emotionally and physically exhausted (1) hope (14) hope and courage (2) hope and confidence (1) hopes and dreams (2) hope and glory and enlargement (1) hope and encouragement and advice (1) hopes and expectations (2) hope and optimism (1) hopes and happiness (1) hopes and prospects (1) hope and glory and enlargement (1) hope and optimism (1) hope(s)には、やはりプラス要素のみがともなっています。日本語でも「夢と希望」という成句が ありこれは先の dream(s), hopes(s) and emotion(s) (2) と同じですが、この項では hopes and dreams (2) があります。 life (24) life and activity (1) life and culture (2) life and experience (3) life, food and liberty (1) life and hope (1) life and joy (1) life and limb (1) life and literature (4) life and production (1) life and society (1) life and soul (1) life and spirit (3) life and writing (1) life, liberty and pursuit of happiness (1) life, motion, activity and change (1) life, society, and psychology (1) life は活動・心理・経験・社会・文化・希望・喜び・自由・身体・生産・精神その他多様な要素と 結びついています。それが人生・生命といものでることを語っていいます。 love (38) love and adventure (1) love and affection (1) love and care (1) love, despair, sex, death and faith (1) love and devotion (1) love and faith (1) love, faith, and morality (1) love and faithfulness (1) love, and friendship, and peace (1) love and goodwill (2) love and happiness (1) love, happiness and sadness (1)

love, marriage, war, the harvest, death, and knowledge (1)

love, marriage and growth (1)

love and kindness and care (1) love and liking (1)

love and marriage (1)

love, and mercy and care (1) love, mercy, praying and peace (1) love and peace (2) love or money (3) love, pain and sadness (1) love and power (1) love and patience (1) love and protection (1) love and respect (2) love, reward and protection (1) love and romance (2) love and sacrifice (1) love and sorrow (1) love, tenderness, and comfort (1) love and thoughtfulness (1) love and warmth (1) 連語として love が先頭に置かれるケースが極めて多いことを示しています。しかし固定化した 成句が少なく3組以上のものは love or money の1 つだけです。頻出する語でありながらこの 現象は、愛情も多種多様である現実を語っているように見かけます。 mind (25) mind(s) and body (4)/bodies (1) mind and character (2) mind and feeling (1) minds(s) and / or heart(s) (10) mind, heart, and eyes(1) mind and matter (1) mind and soul (2) mind, soul and body (1) mind and will (1) ここでは minds(s) and/or heart(s)(10)が最多です。 mental+noun (4) mental and bodily instincts (1) mental and bodily health (1) mental and physical handicaps (1) mental and physical pain (1) いずれも日本語の心身と同じ語順ですある mood(5)mood and attitudes(1) mood and atmosphere(1) mood and emotion(2) mood and feelings(1) mood(気分・気持ち)の synonym が後続していています。 pain (8) pain and anguish (1) pain and anxiety (1) pain and grief (1) pain, hostility and misunderstanding (1) pain and sorrow (1) pain and suffering (1) pain, suffering and hopes (1) pain and surprise (1) pain には多様な名詞が後続しています。マイナス要素以外に pain, suffering and hope のようにプ ラス要素を伴うこともあり、日々の現実の中で体験することです。 patience (9) patience, frankness, and generosity (1) patience, sharing, thrift, and cooperation (1) patience and perseverance (1) patience and politeness (1) patience and tolerance (2) patience and understanding (2) patience, tolerance, tact, sensitivity, thoughtfulness, and live-and let-live attitude (1) 我慢、忍耐、機転、敏感な感覚、思慮のある互譲の精神が表わされています。

peace (56) peace and beauty (1) peace and calm (2) peace, dignity, and honor (1) peace ad freedom (3) peace and enlightenment (1) peace and equality (1) peace and friendship (1) peace and genuine morality (1) peace and gladness (1) peace and goodwill (2) peace and happiness (2) peace and harmony (1) peace and love and love (2) peace and order(1)peace, order and good government (1) peace and plenty (1) peace, plenty and health (1) peace and prosperity (4) peace and prosperity and arts (1) peace, prosperity and justice (1) peace and quiet (10) peace and unchanging quality (1) peace and safety (2) peace and satisfaction (1) peace and security (4) peace and stability (6) peace, stability, and economic opportunity (1) peace, stability and prosperity (1) peace and tranquility (1) 56 例はこの分野で最多です。太字の句以外でも peace と prosperity / stability などの連結が目に付 きます。後続語はすべてプラス要素を含んでいて平和というものがいかほど貴重なものかを例証し ています。 peace が後尾におかれる場合もある。これは後後尾語強調の狙いがあると思われる。 comfort and peace(1) friendship and peace(1) harmony, unity, beauty and peace(1) poverty and peace(1) prosperity, domination, and peace(1) love and inner peace(1) poverty (2) poverty, poor health, natural disaster(1) poverty, high unemployment and alcoholism(1) soul (4) soul and body (2) soul and flesh (1) soul and mind (1) この語で始まる連語は案外少ない sweetness (2) sweetness and gentleness (1) sweetness and goodness (1) will (7) will and conscience (1) will and desire (1) will and intelligence (1) will and muscle (1) will and understanding (1) goodwill and cooperation (1) goodwill, sincerity, and understanding (1)

一 先行の語と回数 一

順位	先行の語	回数
1	peace	56
2	love	38
3	heart	28
4	mind	25
5	life	23
6	body	19
7	hope	14
8	patience	9
9	energy / pain	8
11	will	7
12	happiness / mood	5
14	comfort / metal+noun / soul	4
17	amazement / dream / envy	3
20	poverty	2

― 同一連結句が2つ以上(1組のみものは割愛)―

順位	先行の語	回数
1	heart(s) and mind(s)	13
2	mind(s) and/or heart(s) peace and quiet	10
3	body and soul	7
4	body and mind / life and literature /	4
	mind(s) and body/bodies /	
	peace and prosperity /	
	peace and security	
9	life and experience / life and spirit	3
	love or money / peace and freedom	
13	body and spirit / dream(s), hope(s), and emotion(s) / heart and head	2
	/ hope and courage / hopes and dreams / hopes and expectations /	
	life and culture / love and goodwill / love and respect /	
	love and romance / mind and character / mind and soul /	
	mood and emotion / patience and tolerance /	
	patience and understanding / peace and calm / peace and goodwill	
	peace and happiness / peace and love /	
	peace and safety / soul and body	

1~4 はよく見かける句です。とくに heart(s) and mind(s)、mind(s) and/or heart(s)、peace and quiet、body and soul は成句化しています。

3.2 名詞連語の語順(心情・身体以外のもの)

```
age (5)
ages and classes (1)
                                age and experience (1)
age-, gender-and site-specific colorectal caner risk age and length of experience
(1)
                                                     (1)
art and culture (7)
art and culture (2)
                               art and literature (2)
art, literature, music or architecture (1)
                                               art and poetry (1)
art and science (1)
art と「文化と文学」との結びつきの濃さがわかります。
attitude (9)
attitude and behavior (5)
                               attitudes and expectations (1) expectations and identity (1)
attitudes and institutions (1)
                               attitudes and ways (1)
bits (5)
bits and pieces(5)
成句になっています。
bow and arrow (5)
bow(s) and arrow(s) (5)
成句になっています。
crime (37)
crime and alienation (1)
                               crime and disorder (1)
                                                              crime and divorce (1)
crime and drugs (2)
                               crime, drugs or alcohol (1)
crime, drugs, and overcrowding (1)
crime, drugs, teenage pregnancy and all the other problems (1)
crime, homelessness, and drug abuse (1)
                                              crime and dubious business practices (1)
crime and fear (1)
                               crime, health, child care, and the environment (1)
crime and misery (1)
                               crime and poverty (1)
                                                              crime and punishment (2)
crime and severe tensions (1)
                               crime and unemployment (2)
                                                              crime and violence (9)
crime, violence and poverty (1)
                                     crime, violence, racism, poverty (1)
crime, violence or drugs (1)
                               crime, violence and psychological immiseration (1)
crime, violence and poverty (1)
                                     crime, violence, unlawful immigration (1)
crime, racism, anger, and hatred (1)
crime, violence, and an alienated youth dependent on drugs (1)
```

crime 先行が一番多く、それだけ深刻な世相を反映していいます。特に犯罪は麻薬・暴力と相関関係が大きいことを示していいます。

• fact (7)

fact and fiction (1) fact and information (2) facts and rules (1)

facts and statistics (2) facts and the truth (1)

• fad(s) (5)

fad(s) and fashion(s) (4) fads, styles, and fashions (1)

• freedom (5)

freedom and democracy (2) freedom and fun (1) freedom and independence (2)

freedom and space of the U.S. (1)

• home (9)

home or community (1) home(s) and family / families (4)

homes and furniture (1) home and office (1)

homes and offices, schools and factories (1) ...come home to an empty house (1)

• hunger (5)

hunger, poverty or discrimination (1) hunger and disease (1) hunger, poverty and pollution (1) hunger and thirst (2)

• ideas (5)

new ideas and new blood (1) ideas and customs (1) ideas and culture (1)

ideas and information (2)

knowledge (6)

knowledge and experience (2) knowledge and skill (1) knowledge and thought (1)

knowledge and understanding (2) knowledge and wisdom (1)

• laws (9)

laws and conventions (1) laws and customs (2) law and order (5)

laws, rules, regulations, traditions, and precedents (1)

「法」と「秩序」は不可分な要素であることを示しています。

• language (14)

language and communication (1) language and culture (11)

language, culture and communication (1) language and metaphor (1)

language, religion and cultural tradition (1)

言語はコミニューケーション・宗教や文化の基盤になっていることを表しています。 (参考)

アメリカのジャーナリスト、ピーター・ウェルド氏は「言語と文化は接着双生児のような関係にあり、一方が死ねば、他方が生き残る可能性はほとんど無いと」言っています。

Language and Culture are like conjoined twins: when one dies, there's little chance that the

も文化を伴ったものではないためにあまり普及しないのを見てもこのことが立証できます。 leaps (6) leaps and bounds(6) これは成句になっている。 office (5) offices and businesses (1) office and factory (2) offices and stores (2) politics (10) politics and commerce (1) politics and economics (4) **political, economic**, or religious reasons (1) politicians and economists (1) politics and society (3) 日本語と同様「政治・経済」の語順になっています。政治のほうが経済を支配していることを示 しています。 room(s)(5)room(s) and board(s) (5) これも成句になっています。 rule(s) (8) rules and conventions (3) rules and customs (2) rules and principles (1) rules and values (2) size(s) (13) size and height (1) size and shape (10) size, shape, colour (1) size, shape, colour and luster(1) (参考) shapes and colors (1) shapes, and colours (1) shapes and sizes and colors (1) size 先行が shape 先行よりもはるかに多いようです。 stress (8) stress and overwork (1) stress and strain (1) stress(s) and tension(s) (6) strength (5) strength and comfort (1) strength and dominance (1) strength and determination (1) strength and encouragement (1) strength and loveliness (1) thought(s) (7) thought and action (1) thought and culture (1) thoughts and feelings (2) thoughts and intentions (1) thoughts and impressions (1) thoughts and politics (1) ideas と同様「人間は考える葦」を連想させます。 violence (11)

エスペラント語は人工語であり全世界で学ばれ意思疎通の手段として使われらることはあって

Peter Weld, Facing the Future

other can survive.

violence and the throwing of bombs (1) violence and destruction (1) violence, bloodshed and death (1) violence and **crime** (2) violence, death and dark Gothic fantasies (1) violence and guns (1) violence, **drugs**, sex, and materialism (1) violence and injustice (1) violence, sex, **drugs**, and materialism (1) violence and war (1) violence は crime と同様、麻薬との相関関係があり、crime と同様、負の要素が後続している。 crime とこの violence は現代世相を映じています。 war, violence, famine, and death (1) pornography, drugs, and violence (1) wealth (12) wealth and comfort (1) wealth and leisure and peace (1) wealth and luxury (1) wealth and power (5) wealth, power and constitutional freedoms (1) wealth, power, and success (1) wealth and property (1) wealth and poverty (1) 富は権力、慰安、余暇、贅沢、自由、成功などとの相関性を示しています。 word(s) (28) words and actions (1) word(s) and deed(s) (2) words and diagrams (1) words and expressions (6) words, expressions and grammatical constructions (1) word, idioms, interjections and some grammatical features (1) words and gestures (1) words and ideas (2) words, idioms, sentence final particles (1) words and phrased (7) words and sentences (1) word(s) and thought(s) (2) words, and tone of voice (1) words and manners (1) word は言語・行動・思想の基本要素である。phrase、sentence、expression、thought などが続 いています。 3.3 学事関係 [科目] art (4) art, literature, music or architecture (1) art and literature (1) arts and science (1) art and poetry (1) chemistry (3) chemistry and physics (3) 日本語の語順とは反対です。 drawing (2) drawing and painting (1) drawings and paintings (1) geography (1) geography and history (1)

日本語では「地歴」というが反対に英語の geography and history が成句化しているか不明。

- math/ mathematics (3)
 - math and science (2) mathematics, physics, chemistry, biology, and astronomy (1)
- measuring (1)

measuring and calculating (1)

- painting (3)
 - painting and drawing (2) paintings and drawings (1) 先の drawing とは語順が反対。どちらも使われるようです。
- physics (2)
 - physics and chemistry (1) physics and mathematics (1) 「物理・化学」が1例のみ。
- science (18)

science and industry(1) science and technology (14) science and mathematics(2) scientific discoveries and technological innovations(1)

science and technology は今回の例文では一番多く、学事関係でも他を圧倒しています。日本 語の語順と同じで。自然科学が工学・科学技術の基盤であることを示しています。

[文房具]

- paper (3)
 - some paper and ink (1) papers and pencils (1) note pad and pencil (1) 日本語式の「紙と鉛筆」は1例のみ。
- pen(s) (8)

pens and these pencils (1) pen and ink (6) a pen-and-ink drawing (1) pen and ink は馴染み深い慣用句。最近はボールペンの進出であまり見うけなくなりました。

pencils (19)

stop watch (1)

pencil and eraser (1) pencil and knee (1) pencil and paper (12) pencils and notebooks and albums (1) pencils and pens (1)

pencil and pen set (1) a sheet of paper, a pencil and rule (1)

「鉛筆と紙」が 12 例あり、science and technology (14) につづいて多い。日本語の語順とは反 対で、このほうが成句化かしていることを示しています。

(pencil(s) が後方に置かれているもの7例)

a sheet of paper, a **pencil**, and a rule (1) pens and these **pencils** (1)

note pad(s) and **pencil**(s) (2) notebook and **pencil** (1) pad and **pencil** (1)

slate and **pencil** (1)

3.4 ジャーナリズム関係

- phonograph (1)
 phonograph, radio, and television (1)
- telephone (1) telephone, radio, or television (1)
- radio (16)

radio and / or television / TV (9) radio, television, or telephones (3) radio, television or newspapers (1) radio and television and newspapers and magazines (1) radio, television, and movies (1) radios, magazines, and newspapers (1) 利用された年代順に radio が television よりも先行して使われるケースが多いようです。私のコーパスでは双方 16:11 です。

- television / TV (11)
 - television / TV and / or radio (5) television, radio, magazines and newspapers (3) television and magazines (1) television and the movies (1) television and newspaper (1)
- newspaper (9)

newspaper, radio and television (1) press, radio, and TV(1) newspapers and television (3) newspapers, television and radio (1) newspapers and magazines (3)

newspapers and magazines は日本語の語順と同じ。最近は活字離れで新聞・雑誌の利用が減少し問題化していますが、radio、television、newspaperの用例に見る限りテレビ・ラジオに引けを取ることはなく歴史を思わせます。

4 反意語の語順

4.1 this, that など

[th	is or that]
1)	How foolish it is to say they believe *this or that* when they understand nothing about it.
	——S. Butler
2)	One is obliged to do *this or that*, to go here or there, to say *this or that*.
	——Paul McLean (The Japanese Mind)
[T]	his. That]
3)	Earn money, they say. Buy a farm. *This. That.* Ah, they are against letting a mean live a quiet
	life. ——Hans C. Anderson (Andersen's Fairy Tales)
[th	isthat]
4)	I was moving *this way and that*. ——Standard Jack and Betty
5)	The tall tree in our garden seemed so full of excitement, blowing *this way and that* up and
	down, in gust upon gust. ——Peter Milward (A Country Diary in Tokyo)
6)	He wanted *this* and he wanted *that*. ——Ken Method (<i>Life's Little Ironies</i> , 21)
7)	When I first came to Japan and looked at the concrete jungle which is much of Tokyo, I also felt
	like *this*. I do not feel like *that* now. In fact I feel almost the opposite;
	——Adrian. J.Pinnington (Inside Out)
(例	外:thisthat/thatthis)
8)	First-time readers of Russian literature are always surprised at how much Russians talk.
	"Should I do *this or that *?" "If I don't do "this", then will *that" be all right?" "But if I don't
	do *this", then will *that*be all right?" " But if I do *that* and do not do *this*, will God
	forgive me,? " "Does God exist???" ——Basil Lechatt (<i>People Are Funny</i>)
[tl	his, that, or the other]

9) Why the rising generation is *this, that, or the other* is a question that appears to have become increasingly in recent years.

——R. Lynd (*The Rising Generation*)

[this... the other]

10) The candy shop is on *this* side of the street. The book store is on *the other* side of the street.

——William L. Clark (Spoken American English)

4.2 here と there など

[here ... there]

11) Tom swept his brush daintily back and forth. Then he stepped back to note the effect. He added a touch *here and there* and criticized the effect.

	——Mark Twain (The Adventure of Tom Sawyer)
12)	He was very glad to have his first hatchet. Without it in his hand, he went about cutting off a
	small branch *here*, cutting off another *there*. ——(Revised Jack and Betty 2)
13)	*Here* is an old man planting for breath; and *there* is a timid maiden, driven by a hard and
	sharp-faced matron. ——J. K. Jerome (<i>The Idle Thoughts of an Idle Fellow</i>)
14)	From a friend *here*, and another *there*, he obtained considerable sums.
	——(Let's Learn More English)
15)	Well, that's neither *here* nor *there*. ——A.Christie (<i>The Labours of Hercules</i>)
[he	re, there, and everywhere]
16)	It seems to me that even in the national artificial city of Tokyo one may find precious glimpses
	of the natural countryside, *here, there, and everywhere.*
	——Peter Milward (Approach to Ecology)
[hit	ther and thither]
17)	I raised its great white wings, and ran*hither and thither*. ——(Let'Learn More English)
18)	And crimson and purple butterflies darted * hither and thither*.
	——John Ruskin (The King of the Golden River)
[hit	ther and yon]
19)	They spring apart and go dashing *hither and yon*. ——Grolier (<i>The Book of Knowledge</i>)
	4.3 home と abroad など
	home and abroad]
20)	She (=Britain) has to face many difficult problems both *at home and abroad*.
	——Russel Barner / Eric Orton (What's New in Britain)
21)	"More haste, less speed" is a proverb which is truly modern, and the Japanese would do well to
	remember it both *at home and abroad*. ——James Kirkup (<i>New Japan Now</i>)
22)	Good manners mean consideration for others at all times, wherever you may be, whether *at
	home or abroad*. ——James Kirkup (It's A Small World!)
23)	It came under increasing pressure both *at home and abroad.*
	——Mark Jewel (An Amazing 100 years: The 20 th Century in Review)
24)	Roosevelt increased the authority of the president *at home*, expanded the nation's influence
	abroad, and in Europe pushed the U.S in the direction of England and France rather than
	Germany. ——Mark Jewel (An Amazing 100 years: The 20 th Century in Review)
	home and overseas]
25)	Japanese banks have limited their lending and investment splurge, *both at home and overseas*.
	——Paul McLean (Japan in a Changing World)
[in	the home and in husiness and community life 1

26)	The role played by women *in the home and in business and community life* in America is
	important. ——Gladys Doty and Janet Ross (<i>Language and Life in the U.S.A.</i>)
[do	mestic and international など]
27)	American people were confronted by the grim reality of nagging *domestic and international*
	problem. ——Mallory Fromm (Culture Without Conflict)
28)	This network is now widely employed in both *domestic and foreign* business.
	——Blake Baxter (Big Business in America)
[in	dividual, group, national, and international]
29)	*Individual, group, national, and international* efforts are now underway to clean up the
	environment. ——(Mainichi Daily News)
[loc	cal and regional]
30)	Ban the increasingly de-massified media, beginning with cable television and cassette, but not
	overlooking *local and regional* magazines. ——Alvin Toffler (<i>The Third Wave</i>)
[loc	cal and national]
31)	Despite the efforts of more than 300 *local and national* police, there are few clues as to who
	is behind the black-mail effort or why Glico is their target. ——(Newsweek, July 2, 1984)
32)	Some linguists identify *local and national* categories such as South African English, Nigerian
	English, English as a lingua franca. ——Joan McConnell (<i>English and Many Cultures</i>)
[na	tionally or internationally]
33)	It's very hard to predict how the small, mostly local examples of best practice that we've looked
	at would actually work out *nationally or internationally.*
	——Jonathon Porritt (Where on Earth are We Going?)
[loc	cal and regional]
34)	It is obvious that etiquette is determined by *local or regional*customs.
	——S. Andrew Kurokakwa
	(Common Misunderstandings in Japanese-American Communication)
[loc	cal and nationalinternational]
35)	It is also used in the legal system, in *local and national* government, in the army, in education,
	in *international* business and in the media.
	——Jonathon E.Porritt (Where on Earth Are We Going?)
	tional and international]
36)	Humanity is all. Humanity is both * national and international.* Do not throw away your
	humanity! ——James Kirkup (<i>I Remember Japan</i>)
37)	The journey towards *national and international* recognition has not always been easy.
	——Joan McConnell (English and Marry Cultures)
38)	He needs her in every phase and level of *national and international* life.

	——Pearl S. Buck (Changing Relationship between Men and Women)
39)	One discovers one's *national and international* without even trying.
	——William Currie (Light Essay 21)
40)	Armstrong became first a *natural and then an international* figure —acting as an bandleader,
	appearing in movies and on TV, and, of course, cutting records.
	——Mark Jewel (An Amazing 100 years: The 20 th Century in Review)
	4.4 in and out など
[V +	- in and out]
41)	The animals on Earth breathe *in*and oxygen and breathe *out* carbon dioxide.
	——Early Times (Environmentally Yours)
42)	The speed down the road as if they own it, cutting *in and out*, disregarding the safety of other
	motorists. ——Douglas Stout (<i>Understanding Spoken English</i>)
43)	I made a door and came *in and out* this way. ——Daniel Defoe (Robinson Crusoe)
44)	We amused ourselves for an hour or two, darting *in and out* among the crowd and setting off
	our crackers. ——Thomas Bailey Aldrich (<i>The Story of a Bad Boy</i>)
45)	The lives of most men are like street cars contentedly on their rails and they despise the
	sprightly flivver that dashes *in and out* the traffic and speed so jauntily across the open
	country. ——William S.Maugham (<i>Nafew</i>)
46)	Japanese people spend a lot more time than Westerners getting *in and out* shoes.
	——Douglas Stout (American Potpouri)
47)	On the other hand, many men and women go *in and out of* the cages for years.
	——Grolier (The Book of Knowledge)
48)	Well-scrubbed obedient sons and daughters dutifully file *in and out* the library and
	classrooms. ——Douglas Stout (Understanding Spoken English)
49)	All morning Jody kept the wound open and the air passing *in and out* freelythe wound in
	his throat bellowsed *in and out*. ——William S. Maugham (<i>The Human Element</i>)
50)	He methodically went about annoying his governess by pushing *in* and pulling *out* his
	chair several times, watching her face. ——J.D. Salinger (For Esme with Love and Squalor)
51)	Their fellows in study English desperately, both *in school and out*.
	——Paul McLean (Japan in a Changing World)
52)	All the elements were there that make the matsuri an exciting event:the wild procession of
	mikoshi, wearing *in and out* through the crowds.
	——E.G. Seidensticker (Japanese Culture from Foreign Eyes)

[V+in and out of]

53) He has been *in and out of* the news for violation of traffic regulation,...

	——Toshiko Marks (Double Vision)
54)	For a moment he was *in and out of* my house.
	——Sir Conan Doyle (<i>The Adventure of the Cardboard Box</i>)
55)	Some store will check the number of items each customer brings *in and out of* the dressing
	room. ——Richard Goodman (Watch What You Say)
56)	People tend to drink too much, cry, fall *in* love, fall *out of* love, think deeply about life,
	and then fall asleep. ——Basil Lechatt (<i>People Are Funny</i>)
57)	We could not visit them all, but went to as many as possible *in and out of*London.
	——Toshiko Marks (Double Vision)
58)	There was much betting and people went * in and out* of the roomthe betters went *in and
	out of * the room. ——E. Hemingway (<i>The Old Man and the Sea</i>)
[V +	-the ins and outs of]
59)	A guide was explaining *the ins and outs* monkey society and mentioned that he knew every
	one of the 100 monkeys by sight. ——Jared Taylor (<i>Shadows of the Rising Sun</i>)
[V	+into and out of]
60)	Here and there in the wall thee were, of course, several gateways leading *into and out of* the
	city. ——Peter Milward (England in Sketches)
[wi	thinwithout]
61)	Japanese as Seen from Within, Japan as Seen Without ——Agnes Chan (<i>To Be International</i>)
62)	There was a long time of silence both *within and without*.
	——Robert L.Stevenson (<i>Treasure Island</i>)
63)	Leaders from both *within and without* administrations are maintaining the fiction that women
	lack the stability, the intellectual curiosity to teach adults certain traditional subjects.
	——Ethel J. Alpenfels (Women in the Professional World)
[in	and out]
64)	There was much betting and people went * in and out* of the roomthe betters went *in and
	out of * the room. ——E. Hemingway (<i>The Old Man and the Sea</i>)
65)	All morning Jody kept the wound open and the air passing *in and out* freelythe wound in
	his throat bellowsed *in and out*. ——William S. Maugham (<i>The Human Element</i>)
66)	He methodically went about annoying his governess by pushing *in* and pulling *out* his
	chair several times, watching her face. — J.D. Salinger (For Esme with Love and Squalor)
67)	Their fellows in study English desperately, both *in school and out*.
	——Paul McLean (<i>Japan in a Changing World</i>)
68)	All the elements were there that make the matsuri an exciting event:the wild procession of
	mikoshi, wearing *in and out* through the crowds.
	—E. G. Seidensticker (Japanese Culture from Foreign

Eyes) [week in \langle , \rangle week out] 69) They attend my classes regularly,* week in, week out* ——James Kirkup (New Japan Now) 70) He laughed at the folly of men who, *week in week out* left their hard-earned money with the -Frank O'Connor (*The Stories of Frank O'Connor*) publicans,... [within and without] 71) Leaders from both *within and without* administration are maintaining the fiction that women lack the stability. —Ethel J. Alpenfels (Women in the Professional World) 72) Japan as Seen from *Within, Japan as Seen Without* ——Agnes Chan (*To Be International*) 73) There was a long time of silence both *within and without*. Robert L. Stevenson (*Treasure Island*) [within and outside] 74) There must always be plenty of room for experiment both *within and outside* the system. —David Peaty (*Global Challenges*) [within and across] 75) Through knowledge, we can overcome the hurdles of communication *within and across* cultures. -Joan McConnel (Communicating Across Cultures) [inside and outside] 76) The house thus opens out, and any street division between *the inside and the outside* disappears. -David Burleigh (*Japanese and Westerners*) 77) Knowledge will help us build bonds of friendship *inside and outside* our culture. ——Loan McConnell (Communicating Across Cultures) 78) There are no mountains or even hills *inside and outside* the city. George Mikes (*The Land of the Rising Yen: Japan*) 79) I live in two worlds. One *inside* and one *outside*. -(Total English Junior Crown Series 3) [insider(s) and outsider(s)] 80) It may be that in slang there is a roughly similar device in English for distinguishing between *insider and outsider*. —Edwar Seidensticker (*Japanese and Americans*) 81) Canadians have no consciousness of *insiders and outsiders*. -Antony Cominos (An International Exploration) 82) The Japanese endlessly discriminate between *insiders and outsiders.* —Adrian J. Pinnington (*Inside Out*) [insiders or outsiders] 83) The fact that Japanese people place so much emphasis upon English comes from the tendency to class all people as *insiders or outsiders.* ——Adrian J.Pinnington (*Inside Out*)

[ins	side and out]	
84)	The God told Noah to make the ark of gopher wood and line it with pitch *inside and out* to	
	make it waterproof. ——Willa Fogle (Stories from the Old Testament)	
85)	The girl got the dress out of the window. Mrs. Bramble examined it closely *inside and out*,	
	and after asking permission, tried it on. ——G. C.Thornley (<i>True or Not</i>)	
[ins	side-out]	
86)	In some moods it makes me feel that education in Japan is simply *inside-out*.	
	——Adrian Pinnington (Inside Out)	
[ins	side-out and upside-down]	
87)	What I mean is that everything is confused, * inside-out and upside-down*.	
	——David Peaty (Global Challenges)	
[in-	goingout-going]	
88)	The *in-going* traffic still passes under the archway; but the *out-going traffic has to go round	
	the gate. ——Peter Milward (England in Sketches)	
[inj	put and output]	
89)	The arcuate fasciculus is involved in integrating the *input and output* aspects of speech.	
	——Sally P. Springer / Georg Deutsch (Left Brain, Right Brain)	
[inv	wardsoutwards]	
90)	Study of the language must be turned *inwards* to clarify these points, not *outwards*to the	
	everyday world. ——Bruce Pattisom(<i>The Teaching of Literature</i>)	
[in	and about]	
91)	Living near the water I was much *in and about* it.	
	——Benjamin Franklin (the Autobiography)	
[in	and around]	
92)	But the Shona people, who used to live *in and around* Great Zimbabwe, do not speak about	
	the walls and other signs of their great past. ——G.C.Thornley(It's a Mysterious World)	
93)	Britain has always been famous for Classic clothes, that is, well-made, traditional clothes made	
	from good quality materials. The origin of this tradition lies *in and immediately around* a	
	narrow street in central London called Savile Row. ——John Randle (Style in Britain)	
94)	There is York in the north of England, which has a large minister or cathedral *in the centre and	
	around* which most of the streets are very old. —— <i>Ibid</i> .	
95)	The evidence tribunal investigators have collected on the ground *in and around* Kosovo and	
	from NATO countries is "voluminous, abundant." ——(The New York Times)	
[in and near]		
96)	In August 1951, a lot of fires were started *in and near* the city,	
	——G. C. Thornley (It's a Mysterious World)	

97) Bomb experts checked lockers, backpacks	and parked cars Wednesday *in and near* the
Colorado high school.	—(International Herald Tribune, April 2, 1999)
[in and beyond]	
98) It is hoped that this monetary stability will pro-	omote political and economic stability *in Europe
and beyond.*	——Douglas Lamont (<i>Understanding the Eu</i>)
99) Inhale and Exhale	――William Saroyan 短編小説のタイトル
[include and go beyond]	
100) Each designation usually *includes and goes b	beyond* the characteristics above it.
——P. S	pringer / Georg Deutsch (Left Brain, Right Brain)
101) live and let live(自分も生き他人も生かす)	 1
102) The clear message is peace: a Japan without or	ffensive military forces, a desire to *live and let
live* in the international community, and to se	eek a better life for Japanese
	—Harrison M. Holland (<i>Understanding America</i>)
4.5 imports and exports など	
[imports and exports]	
103) Japan, on the other hand, usually receives litt	le attention except in times when we are arguing
about *imports and exports*.	——Jack Seward (An American's America)
104) Article 12 of the 1957 treaty stated that the	member states would not introduce any custom
duties on *imports or exports* between thems	elves. ——(The New York Times)
[entrance and exit]	
105) They strategically located retail stores at the *c	entrance and exits* of suburban highways.
	——Blake Boxter (Big Business in America)
[physician and surgeon]	
106) He was made *house physician and house surg	geon* ——(The Crown English Readers 3)
107) What does the world yet owe to American *ph	ysician or surgeons*?
	——Vanessa Hardy (Separate and Equal)
[medical and surgical problems]	
108) His father has recently been handling *the i	medical and surgical* problems for an immense
naval project.	——Dale Carnegie (Biographical Roundup)
4.6 land, sea, air など.	
[land and sea]	
109) He therefore know all things on *land and sea	*. ——Donald Keene (Heroes, Old and New)
[landscapes and seascapes]	
110) Even today, as I look at the disappearing *lan	dscape and seascapes* of Japan, I can see all her

beautiful green hills and pine-shaded shores being submerged in oceans of concrete.
——James Kirkup (New Japan Now)
[land, sea, and air]
111) The American strategy after Midway was to use *land, sea, and air* forces to jump from island
to island on the way to Japan.
——Mark Jewel (an Amazing 100 years: The 20 th Century in Review)
112) Japan had been defeated *on land, at sea and in the air.*
——George Mickes (The Land of the Rising Yen: Japan)
113) *Land, sea and sir forces*, as well as other war potential, will never be maintained.
——James Kirkup (New Japan Now)
[land, water and fishing rights]
114) As with similar movements in countries such as Canada, the natives are demanding return of
land, water and fishing rights through the court.
——Gary Dendo (Ethnic Peoples Shaping the 21 st Century)
[sea and air battle]
115) Many exciting *sea and air battles* were fought with the help of radar in the Second World War.
——Norman Wymer (Man Against Nature)
(例外: air and sea)
116) The historic voyage was relatively uneventful for Piccad, 41, grandson and son of famed
explorers of * the air and sea,*and Jones a 51-year-old balloon instructor and grandfather.
——(The Japan Times, March 21,1999)
[air, land, water]
117) Pollution is destroying our *air, land, and water.*
——Mallory Fromm(<i>The Global Community</i>)
[army and navy]
118) Here, too, the Japanese *army and navy* may have been successful.
——Ivid (My Two Island Homes)
[land and take off]
119) It has a wide balcony where you can watch the planes *land and take off*.
——R. Halloran (Japan: Images and Realities)
[army, navy, and air force (and marine corps)]
120) Under the Ministry of Defence in Whitehall come the three armed services: *the Army, the
Navy and the Air Force.* ——Peter Milward (<i>Things English</i>)
121) This (= the age of 18) is the age that is required to be accepted by military services, such as *the

——S. Andrew Kurokawa (Typical Mistakes)
[our own countryforeign lands]
122) We are all ambassadors both *in our own country and in foreign lands.
——James Kirkup (It's A Small Country)
(例外: front and back)
123) Boy's shirt had to be clean, their trousers pressed with a sharp crease *front and back*.
——James M.Stitt (The Generation Gap)
4.7 back and forth など
[back and forth]
124) They would swing *back and forth* like pendulums.
(Worthwhile Stories in Good English)
125) It always swelled into angry waves and rocked * back and forth* as they passed.
——(The Union Readers 3)
126) What a heartrending thing it must have been for that poor man to leave all those things, and to
hear his sister walking *back and forth* in the room overhead, packing their trunks.
——Alphoonse Daudet (<i>The Last Class</i>)
127) The odds would change *back and forth.* ——Ernest Hemingway (<i>The Old Man and the Sea</i>)
128) I return the smile and signals run *back and forth* across the aisled.
——Herbert Passin (Language and Cultural Pattern)
129) He rubbed the material of my sleeve *back and forth* between his thumb and finger.
——Michael L. Sheward (<i>Tacit Assumption</i>)
130) Tom swept his brush daintily *back and forth*. Then he stepped back to note the effect. He
added a touch here and there and criticized the effect.
——Mark Twain (The Adventure of Tom Sawyer)
131) *Back and forth* across the table the cups go. ——Jack Seward (On Japan Again)
132) He doesn't return your ball, and he does not begin from where your ball stopped. There is no
back and forth at allThere is never any *back and forth.*
——Nancy Sakamoto (Polite Fictions)
133) Betty passed a blue thread from one nail on one side to another nail on the opposite side. The
thread was passed *back and forth*, *back and forth.* ——(Jack and Betty 2)
134) Although Hong Kong was British territory, there was no sense of a border between it and China,
and people crossed *back and forth* as the need arose. ——Agnes Chan (To Be International)
[back and front]
135) In the end they bought an eight-room house with a garage and a garden *back and front*.
——(Union Readers 1)

[backwards and forwards]	
136) Golden Heart jumps and plunges and goes *backwards and forwards* and sideways all over	er the
lot before shed can quiet him down. ——Dale Carnegie (Five Minute Biograph	hies)
137) In the deep shadow at the far end a figure ran *backwards and forwards*.	
——Charlotte Bronte (Jane B	Eyre)
138) I determined, therefore, that for the next few days I would carry the case *backwards	s and
forwards* with me. ——Conan Dogle (<i>The Adventure of Sherlock Ho.</i>	lms)
139) I went *backwards and forwards* between the kitchen and the study.	
——Mary Lamb (The Sailor Un	ıcle)
4.8 comego など	
[come and go]	
140) When they hear her gentle voice calling them, they are only too glad to obey, and like obe	edien
children, *come and go* at her bidding. ——出典 ⁷	不詳
141) Fashions *come and go*, and one day black with no longer be fashionable.	
——James Kirkup (It's A Small Wor	rld!)
142) She was a pretty, dark-haired girl of nineteen, with ruminative brown eyes that seemed to	cause
little wrinkles to *come and go* in her little low forehead	
—— Liam O'Tlaherty (Going into E	Exile)
143) She had a freedom to which I was not accustomed. She could *come and go* as she like	ced in
city and country even alone.	
——Pearl S. Buck (Changing Relationship Between Men and Wor	men)
144) Feelings *come and go*. ——David K. Reynolds (<i>Constructive Living for Young Ped</i>	ople)
145) Patrasche watched the milk cans *come and go* one day. ——(Memories of Anin	nals)
146) Even the vernal equinox *comes and goes* with little notice in the United States.	
——Anne MacDonald Muri (Anne's Watching Ja	pan)
147) He mostly *comes and goes* by the laboratory.	
——Robert Louis Stevenson (The Strange Case of Dr. Jekyll and Mr. F	(Hide
148) One would have wondered how the road which found a way out of it had found a way in	nto it
and whence *came and whither went* the waters of the stream that parted the meadow	more
than a thousand feet below. ——(New Light English Reade	ers 3)
149) He *came and went* of his won free. ——(Adventure of Tom Saw	yer)
150) Empires *came and went*, forcing people into unfamiliar and shifting alliances.	
——James House (Get it! Ge	t it!)

151) There was a mingled tenderness and gravity in his manner that appeared to have a powerful effect upon the young lady. Her color *came and went* as she listened with deep attention.

	——Washington Irving (The Specter Bridegroom)
[coming and going (participle)]	
152) People were always *coming and going.	——John Aiken (The Kingdom Under the Sea)
153) I think I'll never get tired of watching peop	ple *coming and going* at Piccadilly Circus.
	——Somerset Maugham (The Human Element)
154) They looked like a legion of imps, *com	ing and going* in the twilight, busy in raising some
infernal edifice.	——Thomas B.Aldrich (<i>The Story of a Bad Boy</i>)
155) By and by the wilderness where King So	olomon had hid the bottle became a great town, with
people *coming and going*, and all as bus	sy as bees about their own and other folks' affairs.
	——Howard Pyle (Women's Wit)
[the / his coming(s) and going(s) (gerund)]	
156) Among these townspeople was a little tailed	or, who lived all alone in a little house with on one to
darn his stockings for him, and no one to	meddle with his *coming and going*, for he was a
bachelor.	——Ibid.
157) The daily Mail and Daily Express in pa	articular seem to feel obliged to keep their readers
informed of these celebrities.	——John Newman (Talking to Japan)
158) *The comings and goings* of the master o	f the house would easily pass unperceived.
	——Baroness Orczy (The Old Man in the Corner)
159) The roar of the throng, the music of bands	s, *the coming and going* of politicians, would have
driven the ordinary individual to distractio	n.
——Dale Carn	negie (Little Known Facts About Well Known People)
[comego]	
160) Almost all agree that there are lines which	*come into view and then go out of sight.
	—Uncle Ray's Magazine (The Famous Planet Mars)
4.9 その他	
[give and take]	
161) Marriage is a matter of *give and take* and	d requires adjustments by both.
	——Trunette Olsen (<i>Linda's Adventure</i>)
162) All parties *give and take* a little.	——Agnes Chan (To Be International)
163) In a good conversation there is plenty of *;	give and take*. ——(Advanced Tsuda Readers 2)
164) Most Japanese always bear "give-and-take	** relationships" in mind. ——Antony Cominos
(例外:take and give)	
165) Verbs, except a minimum of 'motor word	' like *take and give*, are eliminated, their functions
being performed by these 'motor words' pl	
	——C. L. Wrenn (English As a World Language)

当な名詞を付け加えることによって遂行される。) ※この take and give はいわゆる成句としてではなく、運動語としてたまたま挙げた基本語であ る。 [supply and demand] 166) The good old-fashioned laws of *supply and demand* then ensure that prices stay low. ——Jonathon D. Porritt (Where On Earth Are We Going?) (例外: demand and supply) 167) There are essentially two approaches, derived from the basic *demand and supply* equation. —David Peaty (*Global Challenges*) [in secret and in the open] 168) Look rather at him who leads the best life both *in secret and in the open*, who strives always to do gentle and honourable deeds... ——Geoffrey Chaucer(*The Wife of Bath's Tale*) [in secret and in the sight of them] 169) The true character acts rightly, whether *in secret or in the sight of them*. That boy was well trained who, when asked, why he did not pocket some pears, for nobody was there replied, "Yes, there was. I was there to see myself, and I don't intend ever to see myself do a dishonest thing. —Samuel Smiles (*Self-Help*) [induction and deduction] 170) You have all heard it repeated, I dare say, that men of science work by means of *induction and deduction*. ——T. H. Huxley (*The Method of Scientific Investigation*) [producer and exporter] 171) Britain is at present the biggest *producer and exporter* of CFCS in Europe. —Early Times (*Environmentally Yours*) [buy(ing/er) and sell(ing/er)] 172) At that time there were some bad merchants in Africa. They used to *buy and sell* natives. ----(New Prince Readers 3) 173) Towns were centres of trade. People went there to *buy and sell* goods. ——D. Crystal/John Foster (*The Normans*) 174) He took the letter to a shop in London where old papers of this kind are *bought and sold*....At the time he was *buying and selling* old cars. ——John Aiken (*The Kingdom Under the Sun*) 175) John, who had made his fortune by *buying and selling* valuable old furniture, knew nothing about electricity. ——Norman Wymer (Man Against Nature) 176) The human beings who were *bought and sold* as slaves had to appear less than human if the wretched trade were to flourish. ——Virginia Coigney (Who Did It?) ----(New Prince Readers 3) 177) Slaves were *bought and sold* like animals, weren't they?

(動詞は take や give のような最小限の運動語を除き削除されている。その動語の機能は適

178) This is very convenient for both *buyer and seller*.
——L. G. Alexander(Comprehensive, Precis and Composition)
[buy and exchange]
179) I went into a shop on the widow of which I saw, "Books *bought and exchanged*."
——(New English Readings 2)
[individually and collectively]
180) All people are the players, and the outcome depends on what we all do *individually and
collectively*. ——Chris Mosdell (<i>The New Order of 21st Century Chaos</i>)
[similarity and difference]
181) I have tried to pass from merely superficial points of *similarity and difference* to what is
fundamental in the heart of us all.
——Peter Milward (Cultures in Contrast "England and Japan")
182) The feeling of affection among friend makes us appreciate both *the similarities and the
differences* among people. —Joan McConnell (Communicating across Cultures)
[field and forest]
183) When he went to the old place to play, all the animals and birds in the fields and in the forests*
gathered around him. ——(New Horizon English Course 2)
[urban, suburban, and rural areas]
184) Unfortunately the popularity of gang-style talk has strengthened the influence of gangs in
urban, suburban, and even rural areas in the U.S.
——Antony Cominos (An International Exploration)
[a neighboringdistant country]
185) This difference is a typical example of one well-known phrase, *a neighboring (in terms of
geographical proximity) and distant* (in terms of thought patterns) country. —— <i>Ibid</i> .
[at or near]
186) *At or near* the end of high school, most students begin to experience some freedom.
——Wayne L.Phillips (Common Sense)
187) Hemispheric asymmetries in some form are present *at or near* birth.
——Sally P. Springer/Georg Deutsch (Left Brain, Right Brain)
[nearer or further]
188) Language are, of course, *nearer to further* away from other languages.
——Adrian J. Pinnington (<i>Inside Out</i>)
[now or ever]
189) "No," he said shortly. "I'm not selling. Not *now or ever." ——Jack Schaefer (Shane)
[nowadaysin those days]
190) Nowadays, we know about consumer rights. I should have taken the set back and demanded

that the shop or manufacturer replace it, but * in those days* the attitude was that it was a
privilege to buy something, ——Stephen Hawking (Black Holes and Baby Universes)
[connection and contrast (つながりと差異)]
191) Interestingly, when we apply such criteria to Europe, we find both a *connection and a
contrast* with Asia. ——Douglas Lamont (<i>Understanding the EU</i>)
[on and off]
192) The essays in this book will introduce several members of both student generations, Japanese
and Americans, *on and off* the campus. ——Christine Chapman, 米人 (<i>Today's Youth</i>)
193) Everyone else is riding the elevator to the top of the Empire State Building or is sitting in one of
the famous theaters *on and off * Broadway. ——Douglas Stout (Glimpses if American Life)
194) Almost everyone condemns violence and the use of force *on or off* the campus.
——James Kirkup, 英人 (America Now)
195) Great care is taken in showing a stranger the way, blind people can travel across London with
the certainty that they will be helped *on and off* every bus and across every street.
——George Orwell, 英人 (The English People)
196) He wore sandals which he slipped *on and off*.
——William S. Maugham, 英人 (A Writer's Notebook)
[put on and take off]
197) Anyway, for the next hour, I *put on and took off* so many different suits but none of them
fitted me. ——Brian Powle, 米人(Functional English With Humorous Essays)
198) There was a lot of *putting on taking off* of hats just as, in Japan, there was a lot of wearing
and removing of shoes. ——Douglas Stout, 米人 (American Potpourri)
199) A mask is simply a social convention. You can *put it on and take it off* according to the
occasion. ——Joan McConnel, 米人 (Language, Culture, and Communication)
Jour Meediner, And Changuage, Culture, and Communication
4.10 外/内
[gocome]
200) What he says, and what I write, *goes* in at one eye or ear and *comes* out at the other.
——Peter Milward (Invitation to Intellectual Life)
201) So far all *had gone* swimmingly, but now we *come to the snags.
——Agatha Christie (Miss Marple and the Thirteen Problems)
202) Less *went* in at one end and more *came* out at the other than in any comparable developed
economy. ——David Halberstam (<i>The Next Century</i>)
203) He *had gone* in a swineherd, and now he *came* out a prince.
——Hans Christian Anderson (Fairy Tales)
204) The news of developments inside the strike area quickly *went* out over the different Western

news agencies and the an hour or two later *came* rocketing back over he BBC Radio
bulletins ——David Halberstam (<i>The Next Century</i>)
205) As soon as he got well again, he returned to his calling, —*going* alone every morning to the
forest, and *coming* back at nightfall with his bundles of wood which his mother helped him
to sell. ——Lafcadio Hearn (Youki-Onna)
206) He *was going* to travel in Africa, to visit Europe, to *come* to England.
——Edward Grey (A President and birds)
207) The sun *had gone* down and stars *had come*out.
(Worthwhile Stories in Good English)
[going and returning]
208) If you put them in your letters, you will take a long country walk (I speak from experience),
passing the post office twice, *going and returning*, when you get home, you will find them
still in your pocket. ——Lafcadio Hearn (Kwaidan)
209) When you go to post your letters, carry them in your hand. If you put them in your pocket, you
will take a long country walk (I speak from experience), passing the post office twice, *going
and returning*, and when you get home, you will find them still in your pocket.
——Lewis Carroll (Logical Nonsense)
(参考)
● Virginia B. Haley (<i>Idiom</i>)、研究社(1951)、p. 38
Concrete—*The goings and comings* of the Katoh family are of great interest to me.
Abstract——*The goings and comings* of random thoughts seem uncontrollable.
• D. H. Howe and B.Smith (Practical English for the Certificate, Part One)
{sv. Some special verbs "Go and Come"}
210) He is $*going*$ hunting. In the holidays we are $*going*$ hiking. Would you like to $*come*$
shopping with me tomorrow?
● 原沢正喜「英文法研究」9月号、研究社(1959)
211) I was free to *go and come* as I pleased. ——L. P. Hartley
N.B. come and go が定説だが向こうを(即ち現在地)中心的に考えているためにだろう。
4.11 off and on など
[off and on]
212) Father had been working on it *off and on* but the work was slow even for him.
——Jack Schaefer, 米人 (Shane)
213) There had been tension between the colonies and the mother country *off and on* since the first
colony was founded in 1606 by Captain John Smith of Virginia.
——Richard F. Dickinson, 米人 (America: Drama Recollections and History)

214) If we do not show such consideration, we would constantly bump into each other on the street
be unable to manage getting *off and on* crowded subway trains, and so.
——Ronald Wardhaugh, 米人 (Language in Society)
215) A rain season begins in October and it continues *off and on* till the following September.
——Peter Milward, 英人 (Cultures in Contarast)
[take off and put on]
216) Each participant had to *take off* and some clothes and *put on* others before running on to
the next stop. ——Trunette Olsen (<i>Linda's Adventure</i>)
[take off and land]
217) A helicopter needs only a small place for both *taking off and landing.*
—— (New Prince English Course 3)
218) The plane, headed for London, *took off* without incident. It *landed* without incident.
——Andy Rooney (A Few Minutes With Andy Rooney)
[see offsee in]
219) In America, New Year's Eve is considered an occasion for a large partyThe purpose of this
party is to *send off* the old year and *see in* the new.
S. Andrew Kurokawa (<i>Typical Mistakes</i>)
[out and in]
220) At times it (= reading) gave me roots; at times it gave me wings. These roots and wings were a
great help to me as I threw bridges *out and in*, expanding bit by bit and nurturing my own
personal world. ——Michiko (Reminiscences of Childhood Reading, 1998)
[outsideinside]
221) *Outside* some birds were singing. *Inside* someone was listening to the radio.
——(The Junior Crown 2)
222) I told them that since I was wearing kimono I hoped I looked a bit Japanese on *the outside*
and that *inside* I was a bit Japanese, too. ——Trunette Olsen (<i>Linda's Adventure</i>)
[out ofinto]
223) We are moving *out of* the age of the nuclear family and *into* a new society and marked by
diversity in family life. ——Richard Musman (<i>UK and USA</i>)
224) This is, of course, the shift of work *out of* the office and factory and back *into* the home.
•
——Alvin Toffler, 米人 (The Third Wave)
[without and within]
225) "The further mystery," said Thorndyke, who, all this time, had been making a minute
examination of the lock both from *without and within*, is how the door came to be shut. This
is a curious problem. ——Richard Austin Freeman, 英人 (<i>The Puzzle Lock</i>)
[outwardinward]

226) I could believe that my face was not the whole of it. It was simply a part of myself that was growing with the rest, an *outward* part and therefore not as important as the *inward* part.
——William Saroyan,米人 (And Man)
227) From the time they are born, people must build bridges one after another to all around them deepening their links with other people and things, thus creating their own world to live in. I such bridges are not built, or even after building, if the bridge fails to fulfill its function, or i
the will to build bridges is lost, people become helplessly isolated and lose their peace. I think too that our bridges must reach not only *outward* but *inward*, continuously connecting one
to one's inmost self, discovering one's true self, and being an incentive to the proper setting up
of the individual self. —Michiko (Reminiscences of Childhood Readings, 1998)
[exit and entrance]
228) But the humble bee has as little sence in the matter of *exits and entrances* as the wasp has,
——A.G. Gardiner (A Day with the Bees)
229) Persons of that eminence often like to have such private*exits and entrances*, for
meeting friends or avoiding them. ——C. K. Chesterton, 英人 (<i>The Man in the Passage</i>)
[send offsee in]
230) The purpose of the party is to *send off* the old year and *see in* the new.
——S. Andrew Kurokawa (Typical Mistakes)
[on back(行き・・・帰りに)]
231) Then sun was not yet quite down. I would extend my walk for an hour, I said to myself, half ar
hour *on* and half an hour*. ——Lafcadio Hearn, 英人 (Glimpses of Unfamiliar)
[far and near]
232) The old horse carriages were too slow and inconvenient. People traveled *far and near* or
business, but they seldom traveled for pleasure.
——Norman Wymer, 英人 (Man Against Nature)
233) The story was soon known *far and near*.
——G. C. Thornley & R. Musman, 英人 (The Faithful Servant)
234) Every man who could read or be read to was accessible to persuasive propaganda from *far and
near.* ——Sir George Clark (Early Modern Europe
235) When Raphael grew to manhood, he became one of the world's greatest painters. People now
travel from *far and near* to see his pictures, many of which were painted on the walls or
Italian churches. ——Marius Barbeau, 加人 (Tales Old and New)
[to and fro / from]
236) You must know his mother didlet him wear his suit at times, on Sundays, for example, *to
and fro* from church, when there was no threatening of rain.

-H. G. Wells (*The Beautiful Suit*)

most part	the arguments we have the students were relief to come and discuss the	uctant to discuss	their intimate o	utpourings *in pu	blic,* and home.
				•	
		46			

5 衣食住の語順と英語表現

日本語では「衣食住」や「飲食」は成句になっていて「衣食たりて礼節を知る」「衣食に奔走する」、「無銭飲食」「飲食物」など、「衣」「飲」が「食」の前におかれます。しかし去る大戦後に塗炭の苦を体験した日本の復興の過程を回顧するまでもなく、人間は勿論、全生物にとって生きるための最大の要件はもちろん食べることであり、食物は第一要件です。

New Oxford Dictionary of English 1998 (sv. food) は「食物」の定義として "any nutritious substance that people or animals eat or drink or that plants absorb in order to maintain life and growth." (生命や成長を維持すれために人間または動物が食べたり飲んだりする、または植物が吸収する滋養物)と述べています。

英語では食衣住は food, clothing, housing, etc...、飲食は food and drink, eating and drinking, etc...になることが「和英辞典」にも記されています。この日英の語順の違いに関心があり、関連語句並列の例文の carding に努め、41 例が収集されていますので実態を調べてみました。

「衣食」という語順は「衣食足りて礼節を知る」の中国の故事によるようです。『広辞苑』に「管子 (牧民)倉廩実則知礼節衣食足則知栄辱」(民は、生活が豊かになって初めて、道徳心が高まって 礼儀を知るようになる。「衣食足りて栄辱を知る」とも。)とあります。

念のため韓国語と中国語での語順は下記のようになるようである。韓国では日本語と同じ語順が普通のようです。

韓国語 의식주 (衣食住)

中国語 喫穿住(食着住)「着」は「衣」の意。

5.1 「食」が先行するもの

[食+住]

- 1) He was promptly supplied with food and bedding.

 ——Douglas Stout, 米 (*Understanding Spoken English*)
 (彼はすぐに食物と寝具を支給された。)
- 2) A series of Poor Laws were passed, establishing the right of paupers to receive food and lodging from the community. ——David Peaty, 英 (Global Challenges) (一連の救貧法が可決され、食物と住居を社会から受ける貧困者の権利を確立させた。)
- 3) When they reached the forest they found that food and shelter was very hard to obtain.

 ——Harold Wakefield (Stories from Shakespeare)
 (彼らが盛りに着いたとき食べ物と住む家を調達するのは大変難しいことを知った。)
- 4) French colonies were sent there to give food and shelter to the French fur trader,...

 ——Richard Musman, 英 (*Background to English-speaking countries*)

 (フランスの植民者だちは食物や住居をフランスの毛皮商に与えるためにそこに送られた。)

- 5) I suppose you wouldn't like to do a locum for a month on the South coast. Three guineas a week with board and lodging. ——W. Somerset Maugham, 英 (Of Human Bandage) (南海岸で1ヶ月代理医を勤める気にはならないと思います。食、住居とともに週 3 ギニーの支給しかないのですから。)
- Bronson asked him to come and stay till things got better, at least it would be free board and lodging, and Cartwright jumped at the chance,... W. Maugham, 英 (*Ah King*) (ブロンソンは彼にこちらに来て状態がよくなるまでいてもよいといいと言い、とにかく食事と宿 泊費は無料であった。カートライトはそれにとびついた。)
- 7) Somewhere out of town an exit sign will point to "food, gas, lodging."
 ——Douglas Stout, 米 (Understanding Spoken English)
 (町を出たところに食、ガソリン、住居を示す出口標識があるでしょう。)

[食+住+衣]

- 8) Explorers must carry everything they need—food, shelter, and clothing.

 ——Grolier (*The Book of Knowledge*)

 (探検家は必要なもののすべて—食物、避難所、衣服を持ち運びしなければならない。)
- 9) The white cattlemen and farmers did not need the buffalo for food, shelter, and clothing.

 ——Ibid.

 (白人牛飼いや農夫は食、避難所、衣服を得るための水牛を必要としなかった。)
- 10) Robinson Crusoe was an interesting man in a story. He had to be very independent. That is, he had to do everything for himself. He got his own food, built his own house, and made his own clothes. ——(Union Readers 1) (ロビンソンクロースは物語の中で興味を引く人物であった。彼は一人で自立しなければならなかった。すなわち、すべてのことを自分でしなければならなかった。彼は自分の食べる食物

を獲得し、住む家を造り、着る衣服をつくらねばならなかった。)

[食+住+その他]

- 11) Their time and efforts are largely devoted to answering the call of the body for food, shelter, and sense enjoyment. ——Dan Custer (*The Miracle of Mind Power*) (彼らの時間と努力は主に食、住、感覚的な楽しみにたいする体の要求にこたえることに注がれる。)
- 12) In the tombs of great persons were put their valuable ornaments, as well as food, clothing and furnishing for the departed spirit. ——Glorier (*The Book of Knowledge*) (偉人の墓に死者の霊として食物、衣服、装身具は勿論貴重な装飾品が置かれていた。)
- 13) Over thirty million Americans are poor and cannot afford proper food, housing or health care.

 ——David Peaty, 英 (Global Challenges)

(アメリカ人の3千万以上の人々が貧困で妥当な食物、住居、医療を得ることが出来ない。)

[食+衣]

14)	Not mention riches and honor, even food and clothing are not to come at without the toil of the
	hands and sweat of brows. ——(Origin Unknown)
	(富や名誉はもちろん食と衣すら、手仕事に精を出し、額に汗を流すことなく得ることはできな
	\'o_\'o_\'
15)	When she had paid the rent, Marie had three francs a day. Out of this she had to buy food and
	Clothing. ——L.D. Peach, 米 (Madame Curie)
	(家賃を払ったときマリエーは一日に三フランで過ごした。この金で食物と衣服を買わねばなら
	なかった。)
16)	My mother has to give you food and clothes when you don't belong here.
	——John Kennet, 英 (Jane Eyre)
	(母はお前がこの家のものではないのに食物と衣類をやらねばならない。)
17)	They liked the same kind of art and the same kind of food and clothes.
ŕ	——George Eliot, 英 (Silas Marner)
	(彼らは同種の美術品、同類の食物と衣類とを好んだ。)
18)	She usually buys all the food, buys the clothes for her children, and often goes shopping with
- /	her husband. — Harold P. G. H. Thomas, ** (The American Customs and Manners)
	(彼女はいつも子供のための食物のすべてを買い、衣類を買い、しばしば夫と買物に出かけ
	る。)
19)	They have never been successful, with the results that the whole country is miserably poor, the
/	house in ruins, and the people without food or clothes.
	——Jonathan Swift, 英 (Guliver's Travels)
20)	Doctors were forced to perform a gruesome act of triage, selecting only the hardiest refugees to
20)	
	(医師だちは身のよだつような治療法を行わざるを得ず、食と衣を得るためにもっとも丈夫な避難を見ないような、)
- A	難民だけを選んだ。)
_	[+衣+住]
21)	He usually forgets that the children suffer from lack of money for food, clothing or good
	housing. ——Natalie Reid, 米 (Making Choices)
	(彼は子供たちが衣食住のための金銭の不足に悩んでいることをいつも忘れている。)
22)	We have no choice but to find ways of limiting the number of people who will in future be
	calling on that natural wealth to feed, clothe, and house them.
	——Jonathon Porritt, 米 (Where on Earth Are We Going?)
	(将来衣食住のためそうした天然資源を必要とする人々の数を抑える方法を見つけるよりほか
	はない。)
23)	We need food, clothes, and a home in order to live.
	——(Total English [Junior Crown Series] 2)

(生きるため衣食住が必要である。)

[食+衣+その他]

- 24) By publishing books and magazines solely devoted to showing the names, products and shops of the world's most famous names, food, clothing and accessories every one is correctly informed.

 ——Caroline Dale, 英 (My Culture Shock) (世界で最も名の知れていた名士、産物、店だけを専門とする書籍や雑誌を発行すれば誰もが正しい情報が得られることになる。)
- 25) If one reads novels describing the lives of upper-class Japanese in the 1920s, it will prove that the present fondness for Western food, clothes and entertainments is nothing new;...

 ——Donald Keene, 米 (*The Distinctiveness of the Japanese*) (1920 年代の日本の上流階級が過ごしていた生活を書いた小説を読めば西欧の食べ物、衣
- 26) The Lapps do not have an easy life. Very little vegetation grows in such a cold climate. The reindeer supply the Lapps with food, clothing and even transportation.

服、娯楽えの大きな今の愛着は目新しいものではないことが分かる。)

——Joan McConnell, 米 (*Understanding Europe*) (ラップ人たちの生活は楽なものではない。そのような寒冷気候では野菜はほとんど生産しない。トナカイがラップ人に食べ物、衣類を与え物の輸送を手伝う。)

[食+看護]

27) What she needs now is food and care. ——(New Prince Readers 3c) (きみの必要なのは食べ物と介護である。)

「食+飲+暖]

28) We are trying to provide money to buy some food and drink and warmth for the poor at Christmas.

——Charles Dickens, 英 (A Christmas Carol)

[食+水+住+衣]

29) I preach, here goes: 1 To satisfy basic material needs (food, water, shelter, clothing) and fundamental social needs (such as health care and education) of all human beings.

——Jonathon E. Porritt (*Where on Earth Are We Going?*)

[食+金+住+娯楽+衣+慰+その他]

We all depend on one another, in some way, for food, money, shelter, amusement, clothing, comfort, all the other needs that crop up every twenty-four hours.

——Bertrand Russell, 英 (Wisdom of the West) (われわれはみな24時間ごとに生じる食、金銭、住、娯楽、衣服、慰その他のすべての必要物を何らかの方法で互いに依存している。)

30)

「食+飲]

31) He is usually an expert on food and drink.

-Mallory Fromm, 米 (*Culture Without Conflict*) (かれは通例食物と飲み物には精通している。) 32) He set warm food and wine before the travel. ——Lafcadio Hearn, 英 (Of a Promise Kept) (彼は出かける前に食物とワインを暖めた。) 33) I gave him some food and water and the day stayed with us. —John Aiken, 英 (*The Kingdom Under the Sea*) (私は彼に食べ物と水を与え、一日をともに過ごした。) 34) To the Chinese, a man is naturally weaker than a woman, and so needs special foods and ——Basil Lechatt, 米 (*People Are Funny*) vitamins to keep up his strength. (中国人には男性は生来女性よりももろく弱いので体力維持に食物とビタミンが必要である。) 5.2 「食」が中位にあるもの [衣+食+必需品] 35) They live in a Western-style apartment or house within easy reach of shops which stock Western clothes, food and other (to them) essentials. —Alan Turney, 英 (Foreigners in Japan) (彼らは洋服、食物と他の日用品が置かれている店のじき近くの西洋風のアパートまたわ家屋 に住んでいる。) [衣+食+学費] 36) This often means the father becomes a stranger to her children even though he may have to pay for their clothes, food, school expenses. ——Elizabeth Curry, 英 (Women in Society) (このことは、父がたとえ衣類、食物、学費を支払わねばならなくても子供にとって見知らぬ他 人のような存在となるることを意味することがよくある。) [衣+食+自動車] 37) Its criticism of the consumer culture actually reinforced an existing movement toward making the government and industry responsible for ensuring the safety of clothing, food, and automobiles. ——Mark Jewel, ★ (An Amazing 100 years) (消費文化の批判によって政府と工業に衣、食、自動車の安全性をを確保する責任を負わせ る方向に現行の運動を強化した。) [飲+食+住] 38) The Aussie who go abroad are, on the whole, in their early twenties. They travel mainly to nearly Asian countries where beer, food, and lodging are cheap. ——Basil Lechatt, 米 (*People Are Funny*) (オーストラリア人が外国に移動するのは全体的に見て 20 世紀初頭である。彼らは主としてビ ール、食物、住居の安いほとんどアジや諸国に行く。)

51

「教育+食+衣]

39) It was no longer necessary for a mother to have seven or eight children in order to have two or three of their survive. Almost all babies survived. But living was expensive, and children needed education, food and clothes. ——James M. Stitt, 英 (*The Generation Gap*) (母が二三人の分身を持とうとして 7、8 人の子供を生むことはもう必要のないことになったが、生活費がかさみ、子供には教育、食物、衣類が必要となった。)

[住+食+衣+暖房+費用]

40) She had to live on sixty cents a day —pay for her room, her food, clothes, heat, and expenses at the university. ——Dale Carnegie, 米 (*Biographical Roundup*) (彼女は一日六十セントで生活しなければならなかった—大学では部屋、食物、衣類、暖房、その他の費用を払わなければならなかった。)

5.3 「食」が最後尾にあるもの

[住+衣+食]

41) Now, let me try to show you the effects of climate on Japanese and English Daily life. That is in our Housing, Clothing and Food. ——(Let's learn More English) (さて、日本とイギリスの日常生活に対する気候の影響をお教えしましょう。それは私たちの住居、衣服、食物に表われています。)

「 土+水+眠+エネルギ+衣+食]

42) Obviously, there are limits to American generosity because new arrivals need land, water, energy, clothing, and food. ——Paul McLean, 米 (America: Inside and Outside) (新天地にやって来たとき土地、水、エネルギ、衣服や食物が必要となるのでアメリカ人的寛容性にも明らかに限界が生じる。)

総計 41 例

5.1「食」先行のもの・・・ 33 (80.5%)

 [食+住]・・・6(14.6%)
 [食+看護]・・・1

 [食+住+衣]・・・3(7.3%)
 [食+飲+暖]・・・1

 [食+住+その他]・・・3(7.3%)
 [食+水+住+衣]・・・1

 [食+衣]・・・7(17.1%)
 [食+金+住+娯+衣+尉+その他]・・・1

 [食+衣+住]・・・3(7.3%)
 [食+飲]・・・4(9.8%)

 [食+衣+その他]・・・3(7.3%)

5.2 「食」が中位にあるもの・・・ 6 (14.6%)

 [衣+食+その他]・・・ 1
 [飲+食+住]・・・ 1

 [衣+食+学費]・・・ 1
 [教育+食+衣]・・・ 1

 [衣+食+車]・・・ 1
 [住+衣+食+暖+費用]・・・ 1

5.3 「食」が最後尾にあるもの・・・ 2 (4.9%)

[住+衣+食]・・・ 1 [土+水+眠+エネルギ+衣+食]・・・ 1

- 「食」先行 80.5%、「食」中位 14.6%、「食」最後尾 4.9%で、特に「食」の先行と最後尾とは 全く対照的です。
- 「食」+「衣」が全体17.1%、「食」+「住」16.4%、「食」+「衣」その他との組み合わせは27.7%で多い。しかし和英辞典のいう「食」+「衣」+「住」は案外に少なく3 例(7.3%)にすぎません。
- 「食」が中位にあっても2番目に置かれているのは6例中5例で、やはり「食」を重視する 意識が伺えます。
- 「衣食住」は1例もなく中国の故事は英語には通用しないようです。「飲食」もありません。
- 食、衣、住、以外にさまざまな語句が前後に置かれ多様な連語をなしています。

6 REPEATITION (反復)

同一または類似の音や語句・節・文を繰り返して使うことは修辞学では重要な位置を占めています。それらの意味を強調し臨場感を与え、文章に平衡感覚を付けて口調を整え、言語の装飾的な機能を発揮させるために使用されます。

アメリカの南北戦争のときの 16 代大統領リンカーンが戦場のゲテスバーグでした演説のなかにある the government of the people, by the people, for the people の名句は民主主義のエッセンスをあらはす名句としていまも語りつがれていますし、アメリカの公民権運動指揮者の黒人牧師マーチン・ルサー・キングが熱情をこめてくり返した I have a dream.は人々の心に深い感銘を与え理想の社会を実現させるエポック・メーキングになりました。いずれも語句・文をくり返し述べられているところに特徴あります。ことばのくり返し・反復は、時には REDUNDANCY(冗長)ととらえられることもありますが、多くの場合人々の心に強い響として刻みこまれ、それだけ読み手の心をひきつける力があります。普通は二語もまたは三語を繰り返すだけですが、私のコーパス(収集カード)に収められている同一語句が連記されその特性と異常性を描写している実例のいくつかを紹介し特性の一面を考えてみたいと思います。

6.1 【名詞】

[art]

When I am asked, "What do you think of the Japanese?" I often answer, "They are a nation of artists." Here, it seems, almost every human activity is transformed into art. Fencing is an art. Archery is an art. Writing is an art. Arranging flowers is an art. Even making a cup of tea is an art. There is no art in the world so artistic as Japanese art. Yet art in Japan is "art for art's sake".

——Peter Milward (日本人についての感想をたずねられたとき芸術家の素養のある国民であると応えることが多い。日本では人間活動のほとんどが芸術になる。フェンシングは芸術。アーチリーは芸術。書は芸術。生け花は芸術。お茶を点てるのも芸術となる。日本の芸術ほど芸術性の豊かな芸術はどこにもない。さらにいえば日本の芸術は「芸術至上主義」といえる。)

日本の芸術のすばらしさを1つ1つ具体例をあげて訴えていて、その真実性が読者の心に 刻みこまれます。science と technology が重視され art が軽視されがちな風潮があるといわれて いる昨今、この英人学者の言う日本のアイデンティーと art について反省すべきことが多々ある と思います。

[sand]

2) The endless sands yield nothing but small stunted shrubs. You pass over newly-reared hills—You pass through valleys dug out by the last week's storm—and the hills and the valleys are sand, sand, sand, still sand, and only sand, and sand again.—A.W. Kinglake

(果てしない砂漠には小さい発育の止まった潅木以外には何も生えていない。最近もりあがった高地、先週の嵐で掘り起こされてできた低地のうえを通過します。高地と低地は砂、砂、砂、また砂、そして砂だけで、また砂、砂がつづきます。)

sandが7つ続いています。広漠たる砂漠が延々と果てしなく、どこまでも、どこまでもつづいている様子が端的に表されその臨場感がよく出ています。

[city]

3) Paris is the center of France, and Parisians are convinced that their city is the center of the world. Paris is often called the city of light, the city of love, the city of the elegance, and the city of superb food and wine.
——J. McConnell

(パリはフランスの中心で、パリ市民は世界の中心都市だと確信している。パリはともし火の町、 愛の町、優雅の町、豪華な食物とワインの町と呼ばれることが多い。)

歴史的にも、文化的にも重要な地位を占めるパリ。多様な姿を見せる都市の顔がよく表されています。

[sandwich]

4) What are some of the typical American picnic goods? Well, first there are **sandwiches** — **sandwiches, and sandwiches, sandwiches**. ——E. A. Richter (アメリカの典型的なピクニックの食べ物にはどんなものがありますか。先ず第一にサンドイッチと言えます。サンドイッチには多種多様なものがあります。)

ピクニックは『広辞苑』に「野遊び。遠足。遊山」とあります。しかし英語では野外で食べる食事を楽しむ遠足で、特にアメリカでは自分の家の庭でする場合や戸外での会食を言う場合もあります。アメリカのサンドイッチは代表的で私たちの主食のご飯のイメージがあり、日本のものとは味も形も違い千差万別です。

6.2 【人称代名詞】

[we]

5) From advances in medicine to journeys to Mars **we** explore new territories. **We** change, **we** evolve, **we** use history as a stepping-stone to the future, and above all **we** learn. **We** learn **we** are not immortal. **We** learn our time is "now". **We** learn **we** are driven by a strange "force of life.

——C. Mosdell

(医学の進歩から火星の探査まで我々は新しい領域を探索している。我々は変化し、我々は 進化し、我々は未来への踏み石として歴史を利用する。そしてとりわけ我々は知る。我々は不 死身であることを知る。我々は我々のこの時代は現実であることを知る。我々は不思議な生命 の源泉によって生かされているのを知る。)

we が 10 回出ています。人間としての偉大さを具体例を挙げながら繰り返すことにより力強く浮き彫りになっています。

6.3 【名詞句】

[to get / free / elevate / watch / do / express /cross]

6) Obviously it is time to "to get a life"—another life. It is time to free the soul and elevate the mind. To do something other than watch television. To do something outside the daily routine. To express yourself. To cross the bridge over trouble water. To get a new life! It's all in the word of the songs. ——C. Mosdell (いうまでもなく、いまは元気を出してもっと人生を楽しまねばならない。自由に考え知性をたかめる。テレビを見ることのほか何かをする。日々の決まった仕事だけではなくそれ以外のこともする。自分の意見をちゃんと表現する。激流渦巻く川の上に架かる橋を渡る。これはみな歌の文句のなかでも歌われている。)

[how to play / select / plant / speak / be./ understand / excise / give]

7) These programs teach the audience **how to play** golf, **how to select** vegetables when shopping, **how to plant** flowers, **how to speak** German, **how to do** a nichiyou-daiku, **how to understand** the political situation in France, **how to excise**, **how to give** first aid treatment, and so forth and so on.

——J. Sward (この講義項目にはゴルフの仕方、ショッピングをするときの野菜の選び方、花の植え方、ドイツ語の話し方、日曜大工の仕方、フランス政治情勢の理解の仕方、運動の仕方、緊急処置の仕方などなどが載せられている。)

[began to kill / bite / beat / kill / drink / put out / burn / beat / bit]

8) The old woman gave the cat milk and the cat drank it. Then the cat began to bite the rope. The rope began to beat the soldier. The soldier began to drink the water. The water began to put out the fire. The fire began to burn the stick. The stick began to beat the dog. The dog began to bit the pig. —G. Broughon (老婦人が猫にミルクを飲ませ、猫は飲みました。それから猫はロープをかじり始め、ロープは兵士を打ち始め、兵士は水を飲み始め、水は火を消し始め、火は杖を焼き始め、杖は犬を打ち始め、犬は豚をかみ始めました。)

これは童話から引用です。それぞれ話された文の語尾の語が次の文頭におかれ、つぎつぎとつづけてゆく語呂合わせです。遊びとして私たちもすることのあるものです。

6.4 【形容詞】

[different]

- 9) **Different** men in **different** parts of the world found **different** answers to their questions. We call these **different** answers **different** religions. ——B. Richards (世界には多様な地域があり多様な人々がいて、おのおの論争に対する回答も多様である。この論争の違いを宗教の相違と呼ぶ。)
- 10) There seems to be a multitude of **different** bows appropriate for **different** people of **different**

status in different situation.

——A. M. D. Muri

(立場が異なり、社会的地位が異なる多様な人々いるのでそのおのおのにとって使用すのに 適切なほかのとは異なる弓が無数にあるようである。)

different が最初の文で 5 回後の文で 4 回出ています。この語は「異色」の特質があり目立つ特性であるためそれを強調してくり返し使われることが多いようです。わたしのコーパスでは形容詞としては最も REPEATATION の多い語です。

[great]

11) *The Three Musketeers* is immortal; and a couple of hundred years from now your **great**, **great**, **great**, **great** ground-children will be sitting up nights to read it. ——D. Carnegie (3 銃士の物語は不死身である。いまから 2、300 年後あなたの仍孫(ジョウソン)もその物語をいく晩も寝ずに読みつづけるであろう。)

これは great が 5 回繰り返された場合です。REPEATATION の特性とはあまり関係がありませんが世代ごとに great が増えてゆき、下記のように日本語の場合全く別の漢字を用いるのと比較すればきわめて単純です。東洋と西洋の歴史と文化の違いに基づく家系や上下関係についての考え方の相違が表れていて興味をひきます。

(参考)

12) Again, like fairytales, if songs are good they are passed down to our **children's children's children**. ——D. Crystal (おとぎ話のごとく歌はすばらしいものならば子供の、子供の、子供にうけつがれ歌われ。)

13) The William the Conqueror was **the great-great- grandson** of the Viking chief, Rolls.

——C. Mosdell

(ウエリアム征服王はブァイキングの主ロルズの玄孫である男の子であった。)

[注]

- 上例は "Three Musketeers"、フランスの宰相 Richelieu のころのフランスを舞台にした Alexandre Dumas の長編小説の一部です。
- grand-child(孫)、great grand-child(ひ孫、曾孫)、great-great grand-child(やしゃご、玄孫)、great-great-great grand-child(来孫)、great-great-great grand-child(昆孫)、great-grea

[proud of]

14) In the Days before steam engines, the volunteer fireman was a **proud** fellow. He was **proud of** himself, and **of** his free company. He was **proud of** his speed in racing through the streets, pulling carts that carried equipment. He was **proud of** his strength in working the hand pumps, which pumped water on the blaze. He was **proud of** his bravery in plunging into burning buildings to made daring rescues.

——I. Shapiro (蒸気機関が出現する以前、ボランティアの消防士は大きな誇りをもっていた。自負心が高く、

仲間の自主性を誇り、街を走るスピードを誇り、消火器を備えた消防車を自慢し、水を炎に放水する手動ポンプを作動させる自ら力を自慢した。また大胆な救助をするため燃え盛る建物の中に突っ込む勇気を誇りにしていた。)

プライドといえば、アメリカにいたときあるご老人が孫のことを自慢して、"I'm proud of my grand-son. I'm proud my grand-son." とくり返し、くり返しわたしに言っていたことを思い出します。わだかまりもなく率直に自分の気持ちをことばで伝えるアメリカ人。日本では自慢らしく聞え逆効果になることにもなると思いますが歴史文化の違いを実感しました。

6.5 【副詞】

[around/round]

- 15) The dove just flew **around** and **around** and **around**. ——W. Fogle, 米 (はとはまさにぐるぐるぐるぐるぐると飛び回っていた。)

Round が 11 回繰り返されていてグルグル回る有様が目に映ります。

6.6 【人称代名詞·助動詞·動詞】

[we shall fight]

17) We shall not flag or fail. We shall go on to the end, we shall fight in France, we shall fight on the seas and oceans, we shall fight with growing confidence and growing strength in the air, we shall defend our islands, whatever the cost may be, we shall fight on the beaches, we shall fight on the landing grounds, we shall fight in the fields and in the streets, we shall fight in the hills; we shall never surrender. ——W. Churchill (我々はくじけたり失敗したりしない。最後まで戦いぬくだろう。フランスで戦い、海や大洋で戦うだろう。ますます自身をもち、空軍力を増強し戦うだろう。たとえいかなる代価を払おうとも我々の島を守る。海岸で、上陸地点で、野原、街路、そして丘の上で戦おう。我々は決して降伏しないのだ。)

第 2 次世界大戦でフランスに派遣された 30 万のイギリス兵士がドイツ軍に追撃され、ダンケルクでの死闘をイギリスの政治家 W. チャーチル(1874-1965)が 1940 年首相就任に際して行った有名なスピーチの一節です。

[would]

18) While the old man was busy, cutting and trimming the great block of stone, the lad **would** play among the chips. Sometimes he **would** make a little statue of soft clay; sometimes he **would** take the hammer and chisel,...the grandmother **would** say, "what have you been doing today, my little sculptor? And she **would** take him upon her lap and sing to him. He **would** try to make some of those pictures in stone or clay. Sometimes the Count **would** have a grand dinner, and his rich friends from the town **would** come to visit him. Then Antonio's grandfather **would** go up to the Count's home.

——C. Dickens

(老人は休むことなく大きな石材を切り、形を整えているとき少年は石の切れ端の間で遊んでいた。時々老人は柔らかい粘土で小さな像を作った。時々金づちとのみを手にして一つの石を切り取って像を作ろうとした。祖母はよく少年に「小さな彫刻屋さん、今日は何をしていたの」と言って膝の上に乗せて歌をうたってやった。少年は石や粘土に絵を描こうと思った。時々伯爵が大晩餐会をひらき町の金持ちの親友たちが行った。そのときアントニオの祖父も伯爵の家に行くのが恒例になっていた。)

[used to ... would / won't]

19) Mr. Einstein **used to** admit that even she did not understand the Theory of Relativity; but she did understand something that is far more important for a wife; she understood her husband. She **used to** invite her friends in for tea occasionally and then she **would** ask the Professor to come down-stairs and join them. "No!" he **would** exclaim violently. I can't work here. I simply **won't** stand these interruptions any longer." "No! I won't! I won't! I am going away from here. I can't work here. I simply **won't** stand these interruption any longer." Frau Einstein **would** keep perfectly quiet until he had blown off steam for a while; and then presently, by using a little diplomacy, she **would** have him downstairs drinking tea and getting some relaxation.

——D. Carnegie

(アインスタインは彼女すら相対性論理は分からないということを認めてはいたが、彼女は妻としてもっと大事なことは理解していた。それは夫のことを理解していたとうことである。時々彼女の友人だちをお茶に家に招待し教授に下りてきて皆にくわわらないかと言った。教授は激しく怒鳴って「いやだよ。いやだとこんなところで仕事はできない、こんな妨害にはまったく我慢できない。いやだよ いやだ、こんなところにはいられない」と言った。アインシュタイン夫人はしばらく夫が怒りを発散し終えるまで全く落ち着き冷静さを保った。それからしばらくしてささやかな外交術を用いて教授を下りてきてお茶を飲みリラックスさせた。)

20) I **used to** talk with him regularly. He'd promise to do better, but the results were not forthcoming; he was just like all the other boys his age. We'd have conference every two weeks about his grades. Sometimes he'd need them, sometimes he wouldn't. —B. Lee (わたしは定期的に彼と話した。彼はもっとよい成績をとることを約束したしたが結果はあらわれそうにもなかった。彼は同年輩の他の子供たちとまったく同じであった。成績にについて 2週間ごとに話し合った。彼は話し合い求めることもあったが、求めないこともあった。)

6.7 【文】

[He has a duty]

A cat has many important duties, to fill his day. He has a duty to walk the wall of his garden, to see that all is well. He has a duty to watch what is happening in the neighbourhood. He has a duty to investigate anything strange. He has a duty to wash himself, and create an image of cleanliness. He has a duty to chase cicadas. He has duties to other cats, and a duty to be his Master. For example, if his Master is tiring his eyes by reading a book, the cat has a duty to jump on to his Master's lap and push the book aside. He has a duty not to use his claws unless it is necessary. He has a duty not to be like a dog, noisy and dirty. He has a duty to be clean and quiet.

—J. Watson

(猫には毎日しなければならない大変大切な義務がる。庭の垣根を巡回して万事異常がないことを確かめなければならない。家の近くで起こっていることを見守る義務がある。異常な出来事はなんでも調べる義務がある。体を清潔にしてきれい好きのイメージをつくりださねばならない。せみを追いかけねばならない。ほかの猫に尽くす義務、主人に尽くす義務がある。たとえば、主人が読書で目が疲れているならば膝の上に飛び上がり本をわきに置かねばならない。必要でないならば爪を使ってはならない。犬のように騒がしく不潔であってはならない。清潔好きで物静にしていなければならない。)

猫に過酷で干渉がましい多様な義務を課していますが、それは反面**愛と期待の裏返し**であるといえましょう。真の愛猫家の本音を軽いタッチで描かれていて REPEATATION の特徴がよくでています。

[I think I can]

Soon the engine came to a high hill. It pulled and pulled. As it pulled, it sang, "I think I can!—I think I can!" The long train of cars was pulled up higher and higher. The little engine was working very hard all the time. It kept on singing "I think I can! —I think I can! —I think I can!" Slowly but steadily it went up to the top of the hill Then it hurried down the other side. Faster and faster it went down the hill. Now it was it was singing, "I thought could! —I thought I could!" ——(Standard Jack and Betty) 昭和 30 年代の中学教科書に出ている一節です。蒸気機関車があえぎながら山を登っているシーンが実感でいき大変ユーモアに満ちています。これも REPEATITION 表現のもつ特性の一つです。

[please]

23) Would you please please please please please please stop talking?

 わたしたちは実際はあまり使わない傾向があり、会話ではもっと使うように忠告している本を読んだことがあります。それはともかく、もともと(まんぞくしている、滑らかにする、楽します)を意味していました。元は動詞で(今も動詞のことが多いですが)、May it please you.(それがあなたの意にかないますように)、とか If it please you,...〈よろしければ〉のように仮定法現在として用いられたのが If you please,...となり If you を省いて間投詞化したものです。この文のように7回も繰り返すのは異常ですがそれだけ切実な訴えをしていることになります。

[(I) don't know]

- 24) "Where does the road go to?" Hooker asked. "I don't know," said the countryman without removing the grass from his mouth.
 - "Well, where does that other road lead to!"
 - "Don't know" was the reply again.
 - "What's the name of the nearest village?"
 - "Don't know,"
 - "Where's the nearest railway station?"
 - "Don't know."
 - "Where is the way to King's Lynn?"
 - "Don't know."
 - "How can I get to Norwich?"
 - "Don't know."
 - "Where's the nearest garage?"
 - "Don't know."
 - "Well, where can I get a car?"
 - "Don't know."
 - G. C. Thornley の作品です。Iを省略して Don't know を繰り返しています。まれではありますが主語を省略することがあり日本語に似ています。主語を省いて簡素化して、冗漫表現をさけた典型的一例です。日本語ではいちいち「私は」と言わず「知りません」というのが自然ですし、言う場合は他の人はともかく自分はという気持ちが働きますが、英語の省略は言外の意味としては日本語の場合とは異なります。

6.8 【副詞】

[here]

25) That is what is handed down—temperament; **here** cautious and reserved and self-contained, as you are; **here** dashing and reckless; **here** cold and calculating; **here** big-hearted; **here** small.

——E. Phillpotts

(それが遺伝―気質と言うものだ。こうしてあなたのように慎重で、無口な人もいれば、威勢のいい向こう見ずな人、冷淡で打算的な人、寛大な人、小柄な人がいるのである。)

here は「こちら、ここにいる、」「どこを見ても、どこに行ってもいる」の意で 5 回繰り返されています。この語の訳を繰り返すのは日本語として不自然になるため省略しました。

6.9 【前置詞】

[against]

26) He is struggling **against** vagueness, **against** obscurity, **against** the lure of the decorative adjective, **against** the encroachment of Latin and Greek, and, above all, **against** the worn-out phrases and dead metaphors with which the language is cluttered up. ——G. Orwell (かれは不明瞭、不可解、誘惑、修飾的形容詞、ラテン語・ギリシャ語の侵入、とりわけことばの中に雑然と散在する使い古した成句、死語になった比喩と格闘している。)

彼が戦う対象一つ一つ取り上げ焦点を明確にしています。

[by]

27) America is still moving. It moved first **by** ship, then **by** horse and on foot, **by** river boat, **by** coach and wagon, **by** train, **by** motorcar, and **by** plane. ——D. Stout (アメリカ[人]はいまも移動している。最初は船で、それから馬と徒歩で、川舟で、四輪馬車や荷馬車で、列車で、自動車で、そうして航空機で移動した。) 移動の手段、乗り物の推移が丹念に表されています。

[in]

28) I remember standing, some years ago, outside the house I was living **in in** Tokyo.

——A. Turney

(数年前東京の住んでいる家の外に立っていたことを思い出す。)

29) He replied that it was because the city he lived **in in** Canada was an "old" city with limited business opportunities. ——C. Sloss (彼がカナダで住んでいた町はビジネス・チャンスが限定された古い都市だったからだと彼はこたえた。)

どちらも前置詞 in が重なっていてめずらしい形です。もとの形は前の文では the house *in which* (= where [関係副詞]) I was living、後の文では the city *in which* (= where) he lived であり、この in which (= where)を省略して、in を was living, lived の後に移動して in Tokyo, in Canada をそのまま残した文です。なお出来上がった動詞のあとの in を副詞と見る考えも一部にあります。

[in]

30) He did not think **in** any abstractions, but **in** deals, **in** sales, **in** transfers and **in** gifts. He thought **in** shares, **in** bales, **in** thousands of bushels, **in** options, holding companies, trusts, and subsidiary corporations.

——E. Hemingway (彼のものの考え方は、抽象的概念によらないで商取引、販売、譲与、贈与品という形をとった。彼はものを考えるのに、株券、俵、何千ブッシェル、選択売買、持ち株会社、トラスト、子会

社といったものを以てした)

[of]

31) The discovery and exploitation of language, of fire, of corn, of ships, of metals, of gunpowder, of printing, of coal, steam, electricity, of flying machines (atomic energy has still to be exploited), acting on a human nature which, practically speaking, constant, moulds the real shape of human life, under all the agreeable camouflage of religion, principles, politics, personage, and ideas. —J. Galsworthy (言語、火、穀物、金属、船舶、火薬、印刷、石炭、蒸気、電気、航空機、原子力[まだ開発されなくてはならない]→[まだ開発されていない]の発見、利用が、実際には、一定不変の人間性に影響を及ぼし、宗教、主義、政治、名士、思想によって、凡て好ましく偽装されて、人間生活の現実の姿を形成している。)

in、ofともに9語連続しています。この文に限りませんが続く一語一語に焦点を置くことを意識した形です。

[with]

32) I do not wish to indict the present age, but it is an age that has invaded our peaceful age with garish petrol pumps, with the odious odours of motor bicycles, with bungalows, with charabancs, with doubts, with psychoanalysis, with high taxation, with standardization of everything from tobacco to opinions, with advertisement and self-advertisement, with paint and powder, with prohibitions more puzzling than the riddle of the Sphinx, with. ——R. Lynd (私は現代をとやかく言いたくはない。しかし現代は、いやにギラギラ光るガソリン・ポンプや、いやなにおいを残すオートバイ、バンガロー、大型観光バス、さまざまの疑惑、精神分析学、高率課税、タバコをはじめもろもろの意見にいたるまでのすべてのものの規格化や、広告および自己宣伝、紅や白粉、スフィンクスの謎よりもさらにわけのわからない諸種の禁止令、などなどといったものでわが平和なる時代を侵害してきた時代なのである。)

6.10【接続詞】

[and]

33) Aunt Berth took flour **and** baking powder **and** nutmeg **and** cinnamon, she took butter **and** sugar **and** eggs **and** milk **and** raisins **and** currants **and** sultanas **and** nuts **and** dates **and** figs cherries **and** candied orange **and** lemon peel, **and** she mixed all these things together in a beautiful big bowl. ——J. Aiken (バアース伯母さんは小麦粉とふくらし粉とニクズクとシナモンを取り、バタと砂糖と卵と干しブドウと小粒の干しブドウとサルタナとナッツ、ナツメヤシの実とイチジクとサクランボウと砂糖煮のオレンジとレモンの皮を取り、そして彼女は美しい大きな容器の中にあるすべてのこの品物茶混ぜあわした。)

[or]

34) Whether the animal is migrating, or burying himself in his hibernating nest or den; or flying from some rapacious enemy, which he may or may not be able to escape; or feeding, or sleeping, or fighting, or courting, or incubating, however many days or weeks this process may last—in all things he is obeying the impulse that is strongest in him at the time —he is doing what he wants to do, the one thing that makes him happy. —W. H. Hudson (動物は移住しつつあっても、あるいは冬眠の巣あるいは穴の中に身をかくしていても、あるいは生物を捕食する敵から逃れつつあっても(のがれおおせるかもしれないし、そうではないかも知れぬ)、あるいは求愛する、あるいは卵をかえしていようと(このプロセスが何日あるいは何週つづこうと)、すべてこのようなことをしているときに動物はそのとき彼の中でもっとも強い衝動にしたがっているのだ——したいと思うこと、まさに彼を幸福にすることをしているのだ。)

[when]

35) Japanese give each other presents **when** they are ill, **when** they go away somewhere (especially from abroad), **when** they have babies, **when** the get married and **when** they died.

——B. Moeran

(日本人は病気の時、どこかに[特に外国に]行く時、赤ん坊が生まれた時、結婚する時、死ぬ時にお互い贈り物をする。)

7 「など、その他」の表現

研究社『新英和大辞典(4版)』の「など」、「その他」の項には次のようにあります。他の辞典と比べてもっとも多くが記されています。

● 「など」

and so forth [on]; and [or] the like; and what not; and such like; and others [other things]; and all that; and the like; and things; and allied items; et cetera [略 &c. etc.]; ~or anything (like that)

● 「その他」

the others; the rest; [.…など] and others; and so forth [on]; and the like; and what not 私のコーパスにも「など」「etc.」の section があり、収集に心がけていますので、はいっているものの実態を調べてみました。 etc. / and the like / and so forth その他 popular なものはいちいちすべてを carding はしていません。このため 頻度の普遍性には問題があります。しかし、辞典には見ることのない実例もかなりありますので1つの参考資料として紹介します。

7.1 what を用いたもの

[or what?]

Is it just in season now and somebody from out in the countryside gave him more than he could use, **or what?**
 —Michael L. Sherard (*Tacit Assumptions*)

[or whatever]

- Japanese are fond of asking: "Is America colder than Japan?" or "hotter," or "rainier," or "*whatever.**
 ——Edward Seidensticker (America to Me)
- 3) Beginnings are important, and maybe it helps some people to make a new beginning if they are aware of starting a new decade or a new century **or** ****whatever.****

——William Currie (*Light Essays 21*)

- 4) One gig reason for that dislike of the job is the Japanese practice of assigning young managers to production or marketing **or** **whatever.** ——(Fortune, May 14, 1984)
- 5) Try to avoid asking Are you Americans? Because non-Americans do not like to be asked this question. They are proud of being English, French, **or** **whatever**.

——Paul McLean (*Speaking Politely*)

[what- have- you]

6) One was able to behave freely, to say whatever came to mind and, like or horse turned loose, run around, frolic or **what-have-you** in a totally unrestrained manner.

——Boye Lafayette De. Mente (*Japan's Cultural Code Words*)

[what have you]

7)	To avoid that humiliation, Japanese society pick up almost every new social or intellectual trend
	that appears in the Unite states-consumerism, environmentalism, feminism, **what have
	you.** ——Robert C. Christopher (<i>The Japanese Mind</i>)
8)	No one is a typical anything or anyone—whether British, Japanese, Russian, French, American
	or ** "what have you" ** (As TV commentators in America are fond of saying.)
	——James Kirkup (America Now)
[1]	know not what]
9)	The soul is a conglomeration of qualities, affections, idiosyncrasies, **I know not what**, or
	simple spiritual substance. ——W. Somerset Maugham (A Writer's Notebook)
10)	I have had many severe illness, tuberculosis, dysentery, malaria and **I know not what **,
	——Ibid
11)	I can smell the schoolroom odour —a blend of books and slates and wall-maps and **I know
	not what.** ——George Gissing (Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft)
[I d	lon't know what]
12)	There comes in a new fashion of jeans and slacks and **I don't know what**, transforming
	the students into tramps! ——Peter Milward (My Two Island Homes)
[wł	nat not]
13)	He is a Protestant, a nationalist, a communist or **what not**.
	——W. Somerset Maugham (A Writer's Notebook)
14)	Yet for two weeks she worked by my side cleaning windows, dusting rooms, putting beds in
	order, and **what not.*
[wł	natnot]
15)	Let him clutter up the whole apartment with his horrible manuscript papers, and cigarette butts,
	and radishes, and ** whatnot **. ——J. D. Salinger (Just Before the war with the Eskimos)
[w	hat-nots]
16)	They will ransack London for suitable fittings, for rugs and hangings, china and cut-glass,
	mirrors and **what-nots** . ——A. G. Gardiner (<i>Many furrows</i>)
	7.2 everything を用いたもの
17)	Now, I think they're going to have words for all the features on that island—the kills and
	valleys and the mountain and** everything.**
	——Gregory Clerk (Origins of Japanese Uniqueness)
18)	Yes, yes, I know all about the hardship, the drudgery, the childbearing the -*everything.*—
	——Peal S. Buck (Changing Relationships Between Men and Woman)

7.3 things like that を用いたもの

19) I am assure that they are mot helpful in engineering, astronomy and **things like that.**

——Winton S. Churchill (*My Early Life*)

7.4 others を用いたもの

- 20) Americas, too, have their symbols —national, anthem, the flag, Thanksgiving, the Fourth of July, "Remember the Alamo, **and others.*
- 21) How has this broadcast by solyheitsyn been receive in the West? Many, I know, welcome his words as a timely reminder to statesmen **and others.**

——Peter Milward (Happenings and Non-Happenings)

動詞

8 実践的 Cognate Verb の諸相

総計	† 118
	8.1 build buildings など (97)
[b	ouild (build buildings) (1)]
1)	The Victorians built buildings which we associate with modern times, such as railway stations,
	department stores and libraries. —— John Randle, 英 (<i>This is Britain</i>)
[br	eathe (breathe breath) (2)]
2)	Then he lovingly <u>breathed</u> the <u>breath</u> of life into the form he had created, and man became a
	living soul. ——Willla Fogle, ** (Stories from the Old Testament)
3)	The Bible clearly states: "God <u>breathed</u> into Adam's nostrils the <u>breath</u> of live, and man became
	a living soul" (genesis 2:7). ——Abigail Van Buren, 米 (Dear Abby)
[un	abutton (unbutton button) (1)]
4)	He <u>unbuttoned</u> his shirt another <u>button</u> . ——Erskine Caldwell,米 (<i>Runaway</i>)
[ch	ant (chant chant) (1)]
5)	They discovered Hoichiloudly chanting the chant of the battle of Dan-no-ura.
	——Lafcadio Hearn, 英 (Mimi-Nashi-Hoichi)
[da	ance (dance dance) (2)]
5)	She entered in a beautiful dress and began to dance the dagger dance.
	——Arabian Night's Entertainment (Ali Baba and the Forty Thieves)
7)	He sang the first song, and that woman danced the first dance.
	——Total English (Junior Crown Series)
[die	e (die death) (4)]
8)	They <u>died</u> violent or unnatural <u>deaths</u> . ——Kenneth Kendrick, 米 (<i>Cross-Cultural Fantasia</i>)
9)	Why not let the Great Wall of China die a natural death?
	——Peter Milward, 英 (Happenings and Non-Happings)
10)	You're one of the few lucky ones who're going to die a really natural death.
	——J. Hilton,英
11)	The phrases Hagan-biiki refers to the Japanese fondness for losers, especially men who, after
	many triumphs, are abandoned and die tragic deaths.
	——Donald Keene, 米 (Heroes, Old and New)
[do	oubt (doubt doubt) (1)]
12)	Nor has experience of the living religious led me to doubt my doubt.

	——H. L. Laski, 米 (What I Believe)
[dr	eam (dream dream) (1)]
13)	She was almost able to think that she had only <u>dreamed</u> an ugly <u>dream</u> , and that it had made her
	ill. ——Lafcadio Hearn, 英 (Of a Promise Broken)
[dr	ink (drink drink) (2)]
14)	You had to have a strong head and a fine constitution to drink drink for drink on the China coast.
	——W. S. Maugham, 英 (The Taipan)
15)	You eat all kinds of unusual food, and drink all kinds of strange drinks
	——James Kirkkup, 英 (Students International)
[dv	vell (dwell dwelling) (1)]
16)	Now he was retired, and traded at Plymouth; but now he was retired, and ignorant of, or
	indifferent to, the romance he had shattered, took his treasure to $\underline{\text{dwell}}$ at the Elizabethan
	<u>dwelling</u> of Peacock House. ——Eden Phillpotts, 英 (<i>Peacock House</i>)
[fig	ght (fight battle / war) (5)]
17)	With the idea of self-reliance comes the phrase "fight your own battles."
	——Jeanne Ann Janssen, 米 (An Introduction to the American Mind)
18)	Sun Kgi has been fighting an uncompromising battle against the government for years.
	——Gary Dendo, $\#$ (Ethnic People Shaping the 21^{st} Century)
19)	Many Americans simply wanted to let the European nations fight their own wars.
	——Joan McConnel, 米 (Understanding the United States)
20)	If nation can't produce its own weapons, tanks, etc., it has to import them, and then fighting a
	war is a horrible burden on the economy, not a helpful boost.
	——Peter Weld, 米 (<i>The World Ahead</i>)
21)	When a country <u>fights</u> <u>a war</u> within it own borders, any body can be killed ——ibid.
[la	ugh (laugh laugh) (3)]
22)	Gabrielle <u>laughed</u> her good <u>laugh</u> , with no malice in it.
	——Willa Cather, 米 (<i>The Old Beauty</i>)
23)	He <u>laughed</u> his gentle <u>laugh</u> . ——G. C. Thornley, 英 (<i>True or Not?</i>)
24)	The parrot just <u>laughed</u> —a long, deep, jolly <u>laugh</u> , like the Doctor's.
	——Hugh Lofting, 英 (The Story of Dr. Dolittle)
[liv	ve (live life / lives / lifestyle / existence / joys / sorrows / childhood) (31)]
•	live a life (4)
25)	He wanted to stop being a cannibal and <u>live</u> a <u>life</u> in keeping with the kind face he had seen in
	the water. ——Irwin Shapiro, 米 (The Golden Book of America)
26)	He <u>lived</u> <u>a life</u> of hectic gaiety. ——William S. Maugham, 英 (<i>The Human Element</i>)
27)	The second <u>live</u> a <u>life</u> so romantic and amorous as to be scandalous.

•	live alife (3)
28)	They had been chosen by God to <u>live a certain type of <u>life</u>.</u>
	——Jeanne Ann Janssen, ** (An Introduction to the American Mind)
29)	Carol is 30 years old and <u>lives a</u> career-oriental <u>life</u> .
	——S. Andrew Kurokawa, 米 (<i>Typical Mistakes</i>)
30)	One can find oneself in a foreign land, <u>living</u> a way of <u>life</u> completely different from one's
	own ——James Kirfkup, 英 (Students Internataional)
•	live the life of (3)
22)	If he had been content to <u>live</u> the <u>life</u> of an invalid he might have been alive now, but he wasn't.
	——William S. Maugham, 英 (Episode)
23)	He can <u>live the life</u> of impulse like a child.
	——Bertrand Russell, 英 (Living in an Atomic Age)
•	live the life (1)
24)	He was living the gay, adventurous life every boy dreams of living.
	——Dale Carnegie, 米 (Five Minutes Biographies)
•	livelife (4)
25)	I am 16 years old and <u>lived</u> nine years of my <u>life</u> listening to my mother and fathers fight every
	night. ——Abigal Van Buren, 米 (Dear Abby)
26)	It was his idea that you should realize as soon as possible what kind of life you can lead with
	the money at your disposal, and then <u>live</u> that kind of <u>life</u> and no other.
	——J. B. Briestley, 英 (The Bradford Schoolmaster)
27)	Hiroko says that one course open to a wife is for her to "bury" herself in her children, <u>living</u> out
	her <u>life</u> in them. ——Trunette Olsenl, 米 (<i>Linda's Adventure</i>)
28)	We consciously create and <u>live</u> by rules, the foundation of social <u>life</u> .
	——Agnes Chan, (To Be International)
•	live life (3)
29)	For me the question has had a special import for I have never wished to be nothing but a writer;
	I have wished to <u>live life</u> completely. ——William S. Maugham, 英 (<i>The Summing Up</i>)
30)	"Don't stare at the poster, be the poster.": Escape from the reality. <u>Live life</u> as a poster.
	——Chris Mosdell, 英 (<i>The Mirror Makers</i>)
31)	We bring good things to <u>life</u> . We let you <u>live</u> <u>it</u> again. ——ibid.
•	live lives (2)
32)	The Germans had been strongly disposed to <u>live lives</u> of incessant toil
	——H. G. Wells, 英 (A Short History of the World)
33)	We can have an alternative "T.V. ego" that enables us to <u>live</u> <u>lives</u> quite impossible in the real

—Mallory Fromm,米 (Culture Without Conflict)

	world. Chiris Mosderi, 关 (The New Order of 21 Century Chaos)
•	live lives (5)
34)	That's right. Cat owners like their friends and poets to <u>live</u> their <u>lives</u> in their own way.
	——Kenneth Kendrick / Brian Powle, 米 (Cross-Cultural Fantasia)
35)	They must <u>live</u> empty <u>lives</u> until they die. ——Brian Richard, * (<i>Changes in Man's Life</i>)
36)	For the most part, we have to <u>live</u> "humdrum" <u>lives</u> , as bank clerks, office workers, school
	teachers, and so. ——Peter Milward, 英 (Things Wise and Otherwise)
37)	Describing simple people who <u>live</u> out their <u>lives</u> and die without being noticed, Gray wrote the
	famous line "The paths of glory lead but to the grave." ——New Horizon English Course II
38)	Some young people who feel they have no identity, or that they do not belong anywhere in this
	modern would, are only too glad to surrender to the protective arms of Krisha and to live the
	rest of their <u>lives</u> . ——James Kirkup, 英 (<i>Students International</i>)
•	live lifestyle (2)
39)	A novelist <u>lived</u> a Bohemian <u>lifestyle</u> in Paris.
	——Jeanne Ann Janssen, * (An International to the American Mind)
40)	All humans have the right to decide what kind of lifestyle they would like to live;
	——Peter Weld, 米 (The World Ahead)
•	live existence (2)
41)	At last, to avoid such people, Oyuki withdrew from society and <u>lived</u> hermit-like <u>existence</u> in
	Kyoto. ——Jack Seward, 米 (On Japan Again)
42)	Without papers, films and wireless they <u>live</u> a diminished <u>existence</u> ;
	——Aldous Huxley, 英 (Ends and Means)
•	live the $joy(s)$ and the $sorrow(s)$ (2)
43)	This safety prevents them from <u>living</u> the joys and the sorrows of that culture
	——Joan McConnel, 米 (Language, Culture, and Communication)
44)	I <u>lived</u> again the joy it had brought to me. ——Helen Elmira Waite, 米 (Teacher of Light)
•	livechildhood (1)
45)	There I <u>lived</u> a very happy <u>childhood</u> with my three sisters and a brother.
	——Albert Schweitzer, 米 (Pilgrimage to Humanity)
[no	od (nod assent) (1)]
46)	Sylvia <u>nodded</u> a brief defiant <u>assent</u> . ——Aldous Huxley, 英 (<i>The Claxtons</i>)
[pr	ray (prayprayer) (1)]
47)	Joanna <u>had prayed</u> her usual <u>prayer</u> for the absent ones
	——Thomas Hardy, 英 (To Please His Wife)
[pr	roduce (produce product) (2)]
48)	In 1995, information-related businesses <u>produced</u> over 10 percent of the total domestic <u>product</u> .

——JoAnn Parochetti, 米 (Prosperous Life
49) They cannot compete with large firm <u>producing</u> mass-produced <u>products</u> .
——Gregory Clark, 英 (Understanding the Japanese
[say (say say) (2)]
50) When once you have said your say fully and clearly on a certain point and have failed
convince your friend, drop that subject. ——Lewis Carroll, 英 (Logical Nonsense
51) "Be it so," said the miller's son, who was growing disconsolate, and cared very little what h
did: "Say your say, cat." ——Charles Perrault, 英 (Puss in Boots
[shout (shout shout) (1)]
52) Someone <u>was shouting</u> , a high, wordless <u>shout</u> . ——Jack Schaefer, 米 (Shane
[sigh (sigh sigh) (1)]
53) He had left his scarlet coat at home, and at every step he <u>sighed</u> a deep <u>sigh</u> . ——出典不言
[sing (sing song) (5)]
54) They sang a song about walking with Jesus and talking with him.
——William Saroyan,米 (Who Did It?
55) May I sing a song? Yes, you may [No, you may not.]
——Total English (Junior Crown Serie
56) He <u>sang</u> the first <u>song</u> , and that woman danced the first dance. —— <i>Ibia</i>
57) You can <u>sing</u> an English <u>song</u> . ——(Everyday English 1
58) They teased Jimmy at the office when he would begin to <u>sing</u> one of the therapy <u>songs</u> .
——Marie Killilea, 米 (<i>Karen</i>)
[sleep (sleep sleep) (4)]
59) She <u>slept</u> a sound <u>sleep</u> after hard struggle. ——(<i>The Snow White</i>
60) He sat up suddenly, sending Montmorency who had been sleeping the sleep of the just, right of
the middle of his chest, sprawling across the boat.
——Jerome K. Jerome 英, (Three Men in a Boat
61) There are always some who daydream or even sleep the sleep of mental and physic
exhaustion. ——James Kirkup, 英 (I Remember Japan
62) Pierre <u>is sleeping</u> his last <u>sleep</u> . ——New Horizon English Course 3
[smell (smell smell) (2)]
63) "Jiro San, Fizo San! I smell a smell of mankind somewhere."
——Lafcadio Hearn, 英 (The Old Woman Who Lost Her Dumpling
64) He smelled the smell of Africa that the land breeze brought at morning.
——Ernest Hemingway, 米 (<i>The Old Man and the Sea</i>
[smile (smile smile) (3)]
65) I put this to Dr. Mallako in no uncertain terms. Dr. Mallako only smiled a wise and enigmat

	<u>smile</u> . ——Bertrand Russell, 英 (Satan in the Suburbs)
66)	But the same old nightmare came smiling that dreadful smile.
	——Katherine Mansfield 英, (The Little Girl)
67)	He <u>smiled</u> his bright <u>smile</u> showing white teeth. ——G. C. Thornley, 英 (<i>True or Not?</i>)
[sp	rout (sprout shoot) (1)]
It sp	prouted pale elderberry-coloured shoots and shoots, in turn, were held by a discolored hand.
	——Herbert Ernest Bates, 英 (The place Where Shade lay)
[stu	udy (study studies) (1)]
68)	They studied abroad or they <u>studied</u> essentially Western <u>studies</u> in their own country.
	——Herbert Passin, 英 (Intellectual and Society)
[tal	k (talk finger-talk) (1)]
69)	In the school Helen would have the friendship of other blind children. They would "talk" her
	own special finger-talk. ——Helen Elmira Waite, ** (Teacher of Light)
[tea	ach (teach the teachable) (1)]
70)	Experience teaches only the teachable, who are by no means numerous.
	——Aldous Huxley, 英 (Music at Night)
[tel	l (tell tale / tell story) (4)]
71)	A recent newspaper article <u>tells</u> a sorry <u>tale</u> . ——Eric Orton, 英 (What's <i>New in Britain</i>)
72)	At last he sent word into every city and town and country place, offering a prize to anyone who
	would <u>tell</u> him an endless <u>tale</u> .
	——James Baldwin, * (Fifty Famous Stories [The Endless Tale])
73)	The stones of the West Gate must have many an interesting tale to tell of the stirring times when
	Cromwell's army made its assault on the city.
	——Peter Miward, 英 (England in Sketches)
74)	The director told her sad stories, but still she could not cry.
	——Brian Powle, 米 (Functional English With Humorous Essays)
[thi	ink (think thought / think thinking) (6)]
75)	She might be able to read a book or think a thought.
	——Jacques Barzun,米 (Teacher in America)
76)	There comes a time when we must tell him to be a man, to do a man's work and try to think a
	man's <u>thoughts</u> . ——T. S. Adams, 米 (Some Aspects of America)
77)	How dull the world would be if we all spoke the same language in the same way, all looked
	alike, all did the same thing, and all thought the same thoughts!
	——Ronald Wardhaugh, 英 (Language in Society)
78)	They all were thinking the same thought. ——James M.Barrie, 英 (Peter Pan and Wendy)
79)	She spent long hours thinking the proper thoughts about motherhood and the responsibility of

	producing milk. ——Paul Gallico, 米 (<i>Ludmila</i>)
80)	His eyes were full of thoughts he could not keep from thinking.
	——Jack Schaefer, 米 (Shane)
[tie	e (tie tie) (3)]
81)	Everybody <u>ties</u> their <u>ties</u> in the same way. ——Adrian J. Pinnington, 英 (<i>Inside Out</i>)
	He shave without soap and with a razor-blade two months old, <u>tied</u> his <u>tie</u> so that the holes did
	not show, and carefully stuffed the soles of his shows with newspaper.
	——George Orwell, 英 (Down and Out In Paris and London)
83)	What seem little things help, like being able to dress himself and <u>tie</u> his <u>tie</u> and shoelaces.
	——Tyrrell Burgess, 米 (Home and School)
[wo	ork (work job(s)) (3)]
	I have been working a part-time job for three summers in an effort to help out.
	——Paul Gilbert Jr., 米 (Practical English Expressions)
85)	In addition to my regular job, I worked two part-time jobs —almost doubling my income.
	——Abigail Van Buren, 米 (<i>Dear Abby</i>)
86)	She has to work two jobs to make ends meet, ——Ibid.
	8.2 life is lived など (11)
[fig	ght (3)]
87)	More than seven hundred years ago, at Dan-no-ura, in the Straits of Shimonoseki, was fought
	the <u>battle</u> of the long contest between the Heike or Taira clan, and the Genji, Minamoto clan.
	——Lafcadio Hearn, 英 (The Story of Mimi-Nashi-Hoichi)
88)	Although the U.S. has been involved in many wars, almost none of them has been fought in the
	U.S. ——Peter Weld, 米 (The World Ahead)
89)	In the last century, however, most wars have been fought over political ideology ——Ibid.
[ex	perience (1)]
90)	The views I can see on picture postcards; but the experience has to be experienced. It cannot be
	described, expect to those who have had the same experience themselves.
	——Peter Milward, 英 (Japan and the Japanese)
[li	ve (5)]
91)	<u>Life</u> is simply <u>lived</u> on a day-to-day basis.
	——Layton Horner, 米 (On Both Sides of the Pacific)
92)	His life was lived for this sister, so sweet and lovely when she was herself, so wild and
	ungovernable when her fits of insanity has committed that terrible deed.
	——C.C.Everett, 米 (Ethics for Young People)
93)	His aim in doing so was to reproduce American life as it had been lived

	——(New English Readings(Revised)1)
94)	For more than a week my pen has been untouched. I have written nothing for seven whole days
	not even a letter. Except during one or two bouts of illness, such a thing never happened in my
	life before. In my life; the life, that is, which had to be supported by anxious toil; the life which
	was not lived for living sake's, as all life should be, but be a means to an end.
	——George Gissing, 英 (The Private Papers of Henry Ryecroft)
95)	For the rest of the century <u>life would be lived</u> in the shadow of a mushroom cloud.
	——Mark Jewel,米 (An Amazing 100 years: The 20th Century in Review)
[tel	l (1)]
96)	They listened while the <u>tales</u> <u>were told</u> and their participation made the stories great.
	——J. Steinbeck, 米 (The Grapes of Wrath)
[thi	ink (1)]
97)	Its thoughts had been thought too often.
	——William S. Maugham, 英 (A Writer's Notebook)
	8.3 The dancer will dance など (7)
98)	"The dancer will dance for us!" This was the word. One waited expectant, as for a marvel. One
	played the piano: procured music; sat eating the evening meal—whispering.
	——John Galsworthy,米 (Caravan)
99)	A <u>painter</u> paints not what he sees, but what he feels.
	——Chris Mosdell, 英 (The New Order of 21st Century Chaos)
100)	Painters have painted it. Photographers have photographed it.
	——Alan Booth, 英 (A Journey Through Japan)
101)	A <u>player</u> must <u>play</u> in certain number of games in order to get a letter.
	——Ernst Allan Richter, 米 (America at Play)
102)	She writes her books and magazine articles on a typewriter that types in Braille, or raised dots.
	——Dale Carnegie, 米 (Five Minutes Biographies)
103)	A big boy who is bowling can bowl a fast ball.
	——Trevor Legget, 英 (The British and the Japanese)
	8.4 The rain is raining など (3)
104)	The rain is raining all around. It falls on field and tree. It rains on umbrellas there, And on the
	ships at sea. ——Robert Louis Stevenson, 英 (Rain)
105)	A Russian fashion show shows a huge Russian lady in a shapeless grey dress walking in from
	of a large audience. ——Chris Mosdell, 英 (<i>The Mirror Makers</i>)
106	The prospect of an early death made me realize <u>life</u> is really worth <u>living</u> .

(参考)

107) As a rule they will refuse even to sample a foreign dish, they regard such things as garlic and olive oil with disgust, life is unlivable to them unless they have tea and puddings.

——George Orwell, 英 (*The English People*)

108) Some Japanese businessmen do business.

——Gregory Clerk, 英 (*Understanding the Japanese*)

109) To tell a man that <u>zipper</u> needs <u>zippering</u> is kindness since they are able tgo do something about it.

——Abigail Van Buren, 米 (*Dear Abby*)

8.5 (まとめ)

総計 116

[A] live a life 型 (97)

live (31)	think (6)	fight (5)	sing (5)	die (4)	sleep (4)	tell (4)
laugh (3)	smile (3)	tie (3)	work (3)	breathe (2)	dance (2)	drink (2)
produce (2)	say (2)	smell (2)	build (1)	unbutton (1)	chant (1)	doubt (1)
dream (1)	dwell (1)	nod (1)	pray (1)	shout (1)	sigh (1)	sprout (1)
study (1)	talk (1)	teach (1)				

- [B] Life is lived型 (9)
 - live (5) fight (2) experience (1) tell (1) think (1)
- [C] The dancer will dance 型 (7)
 - paint (2) dance (1) photographer (1) play (1) typewrite (1) bowl (1)
- [D] The rain is raining 型 (3)

rain(1) show(1) live(1)

- a) A は 97 でもっとも多く、B は 9 で A の十分の一弱。 やはり受動態は非常に少なく、他の項目にあるのは live 以外に fight と think。 C では他の項目と共通すのは dance のみ。
- b) live が A では live 31、B 5、D 1 計 37 で全体の 31%を占め断然他を圧倒している。つづいて think が A 6、B 1、fight が A 5 B 2 でともに計 7、それぞれ全体の 6%で、sing、die、 sleep(それぞれ A 4)が続いている。
- c) 人生は「生きる」ことが大前提で「考え、闘い、歌い、眠る」というルーティンをなし「死ぬ」ことになっているが、このことを Cognate Verb が象徴しているような気がします。

9 DO+Noun

(Do が「する、為る」の意味する場合および do+Gerund (~ing) を除く)

英語講読のサークルで参加者の一人が do the slide という表現をテレビでながしていたと述べていました。 最近は英語でも日本語的に do+O で「~をする」を意味する、 あるいはそれに類する表現が多くなっているような気がしています。

研究社の『新和英中辞典(4)』の「する、為る」の個所を見ますと、do、make、try、attempt、play、act, engage、change、cost、have、同社『新英和大辞典(6)』「する」の項に do; perform; try; attempt; play 《a game》; practice; put into practice; execute; carry out; act などが記載されていて、多様な動詞が使われています。これは日英両語の大きな相違で学習者を悩ます一つの問題です。このため、英文を読む時その carding に心がけているのですが、この機会にコーパスに溜まっているものを並べてみました。しかし、主にエッセイから抜いたものであること、他の項目の中に入っていて気がつかないものがかなりあるかもしれないこと、思い付きでメモをしたものもあり見落としたものがあるかもしれないこと、など不完全な要素を孕んでいるかもしれませんが、一つのデータとして紹介します。

前後の語句・文及び出典などはスペースの関係で割愛しました。また do+Gerund (~ing)のものも省きましたが、ただ bookings、paintings、bowling は名詞化されていますので例外として載せました。カッコ内の数字はその数です。

- work 、homework など(計 16 例)
- good, dances, hono(u)r, service(各7例、計28例)
- business, experiments, study / studies (各 6 例、計 28 例)
- job, research, show (各 5 例、計 15 例)
- lessons, something, sums, tricks (裏切り、芸当、奇術), anything, damage (各 4 例、計 24 例)
- drawing, exam (inations), favo(u)r, it, injury, labor, mathematics, mischief, murder, operation(s), problem(s), sports, things, what, wrong (各 3 例、計 65 例)
- battle, biology, chores, chemistry, credit, exchange, errand, essays, harm, the impossible (不可能なこと), justice, A 'level', a lot, the opposite, practice, physics, the same, therapy, turns (各 2 例、計 30 例)
- act, activities, 'aikido', appointments, an article, best, his bit, bookings, bowling, calculation, circle, column left(縦列左), communication, conference, Plane Crazy(飛行機狂), social custom, deed, the dishes, disservice, duty, execution, failure, grammar, gymnastics, handshake, homage, injustice, interview, laundry, the like, locum(代診), marches, a 'jigsaw', Karata, medicines, miracle, the monkey, origami, a P.M. (= post-mortem)(検死), penance, philosophy, art production, program, play, the Football Pools(サッカーくじ), push-pulls(ギザギザ模様), science, the rest, reverence, sales, seminars, square, steps, the 'Swim', tests, theme, things, violence, voyage, walk, 3-day week(週3日働く)、a water-colour(各1例、計61例)

以上の実例を見て気がつくこと。

- a) Action Noun (行為名詞) (work、dance、experiment、study、research、など) が半数近くある。
- b) 上記 a)以外に work(=仕事)、や「~的なこと、事柄」を意味する語が多い(honor / honour、something、anything、damage、など)。
- c) 学校・学事に関係のある語が多い(homework、experiments、research、lessons、drawing、examinations mathematics、problems、biology、chemistry、essays、A Level、practice、など.)。
- d) 日本語の aikido、karate、origami があります。Webster's Collegiate Dictionary (10)は、aikido (1956)、karate (1982)、origami (1956)とはじめて文献に現れた年を記述しています。しかし OED (1)は aikido の初登場は同じだが、karate は 1955 年、origami は 1922 年となっていて、 それ以前の用例から例文をあげています。Aikido は OED (1)にはまだ記載がなく、(2)から、また 他 動 詞 としての karate も(2)から初めて現れました。日本語から借用語として用いられていることに興味を引きます。
- e) column left、Plane Crazy、the Football Pools、A 'level' and university entrance、push-pulls、the 'Swim' などは用法としての自由性が読み取れます。
- f) work が一番多くdo+名詞の特性の一つとして注目されます。

参考として do research 関連のことを語法専門辞典などで調べてみました。

• The BBI Combinatory Dictionary of English 1896 (sb. Research n)

- 1. to conduct, do, pursue~
- 2. detailed, laborious, painstaking, solid, thorough; independent; original~
- 3. animal; market; medical; operations; scientific; space~
- 4. ~in, into, on (~ on the development of an electric engine)

• Macmillan English Dictionary CD-ROM

words frequently used with research

Verbs: carry out, conduct, do, pursue, undertake

• Cambridge Advanced Learner's Dictionary CD-ROM (sb.)

research noun [U]

They are <u>carrying out</u> / <u>conducting</u> / <u>doing</u> some fascinating research <u>into</u> / <u>on</u> the language of dolphins.

Longman Dictionary of Contemporary English CD-ROM

(sb.) research N

do / conduct / undertake research

I'm still doing <u>research</u> for my thesis.

It's a good idea to do some <u>research</u> before you buy a house.

(Sentences from books, newspapers, etc.)

By these we do not just mean that lots of people do <u>research</u> and take time over time.

He also called for the establishment of partnerships between governments and drug companies to conduct <u>research</u>.

Her request to do research this semester instead of teaching was granted recently.

It included assumptions about the purposes for which universities are encouraged to teach and undertake <u>research</u>.

Researchers rarely conduct <u>research</u> with a finished model of the casual process they want to test in mind.

They promise to help you do <u>research</u>, manage messages and conduct schedules.

(sb.) market research noun [uncountable]

They had to conduct <u>market research</u>, then advertise the product.

Randam House Webster's Unabridged Dictionary CD-ROM

(sb.) research vi

to make researches; investigate carefully

これは自動詞 research の説明ですが、make researches とあります。複数形の動詞句ならば可能なのかもしれません。BBI、Macmillan、Cambridge、Longman には見当たらないだけに興味をひきます。

10 **spend** 目的語 前置詞 ~

10.1 spend+時+at+(仕事、行動、本、楽器、映画)(9)

[day (3)、time/hours/evening 各(2)、work (3)、book (2)、activity (1)、harpsichord/movie 全文 内容(1)]

[spend+(time)+at+名詞 (2)]

- 1) Early in life they had developed a taste for some recreational activities, and had formed the habit of **spending** a little time **at** them every day.
 - ----(Revised New Progressive Readers 2)
- 2) I **spent** most of **our time** in Copenhagen **at** work on a translation.

——Donald keene (Confession of a Japanologist)

[spend+(hours)+at +名詞 (2)]

- 3) We can **spend** two hours or five minutes **at** it. (=全文の内容) ——Alan A. Milne (*Lunch*)
- 4) Of course when one comes to understand the terribly long hours that most Japanese must **spend** at their work, it is a wonder that people can be as serious about their work as they are without severe mental stress.
 - ——Richard F. Dickenson (*America: Drams, Recollections and History*)

[spend+(day)+at +名詞 (3)]

- 5) When he was composing this great music, he **spent** days **at** his harpsichord without taking food.

 ——Stories for Boys and Girls (日栄社)
- 6) When she saw his clothes and dirty face, she made up her mind that he would **spend** the next day **at** hard work.

 ——Mark Twain (*The Adventure of Tom Sawyer*)
- 7) Many and many a holiday **had** he **spent at** his book.
 - ——Nathaniel Howthorn (*Biographical Stories*)

[spend+(evening)+at +名詞 (2)]

- 8) Arthur has to **spend** most of his evenings **at** his books,...
 - ——Shirley Toulson (*Education in Britain*)
- 9) We may even **spend** the evening **at** a Japanese movie.
 - ——Douglas Stout (*American Potpourri*)

10.2 spend+金+for+名詞 (3)

money/nickel/rent 各(1)、color/bottle/bar/purpose 各(1)

[spend+(money)+for +名詞 (2)]

- 10) Nello had to draw his picture in black, because he could not spend the money for other colors.
 - ----(New Everyday English)

11) Instead of spending a nickel for a bottle of Coca-Cola or for a bar of candy, people were buying
small packages for raisins. ——William Saroyan (Inhale and Exhale)
[spend+(rent)+for+名詞 (1)]
12)nor were they the property of a sovereign, leasing to small tenants and spending the ren
(which is the monetary expression of the social value for land) for social purposes.
——Aldous Huxley
10.3 spend+(時、金、章、願望、努力、自分)+in(~ing、動作名詞、状態、場所) (34)
[$\{ time\ (16)\ ,\ life\ (3)\ ,\ hour/day/pound\ 各 (2)\ ,\ winter/year/night/time\ and$
effort/effort/chapter/wish/himself 各(1) {~ing (20)、動作名詞 (3)、状態名詞 (5)、場所 (6)}]
[spend+時+in+~ing (14)]
• spend+(time)+in+~ing (8)
13) Children who show precocious talent for music are likely spend time that other pupils devote to
history or geography in perfecting their ability at their chosen instrument.
——Donald Keene (Living in Two Countries)
14) She spent a long time in walking about from palace to place.
——(Standard Jack and Betty 3c)
15) So long as he had to spend all his time in food gathering, he could not devote much of hi
energy to war or politics or theology or science. ——Trevor Legget (Behind the Blue Eyes)
16)most of your time has been spent in assessing art. ——John Osborne (<i>They Call It Cricket</i>
17) The United States is a sports-minded nation, and on every weekend of the year people will
spend some of their free time in watching some form of sports activities.
——Harold Pascoe Grenfell Hill Thomas (The American Customs and Manners
18) It is indisputable that a taxi, by shortening the time spent in getting from one place to another
helps in effect to lengthen a man's life. / On every weekend of the year people will spend some
of their free time in participating some form of sports activities.
——Harold Pascoe Greeenfell Hill Thomas (The American Customs and Manners)
19) Getting up in a hurry, he spent three-quarters of an hour in dressing himself.
——William Tyler Olicott (Myths of the Sun)
• spend+(life)+in+~ing (2)
20) What I wanted was a piece of land which I could love passionately, which I could spend the
rest of my life in cultivating, cherishing and improving, which I might leave together, perhaps
with my own feeling for it, to my own children, a piece of land up0n which I might leave the
mark of my character, my ingenuity, my intelligence, my sense of beauty.
——Louis Broomfield (<i>Pleasant Valley</i>)

21) It is the condition of his rule that he shall **spend** his life **in** trying to impress the natives, and so

	in every crisis he has got to do what the natives expect of him.
	——George Orwell (Shooting an elephant)
•	spend+(day)+in+~ing (2)
22)	He did no work, but spent all his days in long walks about the country-side, and his evenings
	poring over looks in his tiny cottage. ——Stephen Southwold (Sailors George's Tales)
23)	Every day was spent in swimming and sunbathing on the beach and every night was spent in
	parties or in talking late with friends.
	——Richard F. Dickinson, ** (Dramas, Recollections and History)
•	spend+(winter/year)+in+~ing (2)
24)	Farmers and their families spend the winters in making a variety of objects of artistic value.
	——Donald Keene (Travels in Japan)
25)	It is very flattering when people thank me for having spent years in studying Japanese in order
	to introduce Japan to the outside world. ——Alan Turney (Foreigners in Japan)
[sp	end+(時+努力)+in+~ing (2)]
26)	He was writing about balls, and he spoke of all the time and effort we spend in chasing, hitting,
	kicking and bouncing balls: tennis balls, golf balls, footballs, ping -pong ball, basketball, Rugby
	balls, billiard balls, ping -pong balls, volley balls, bowling balls, and polo balls.
	——Jack Seward (An American's America)
27)	We often spend a great deal of effort in going to the place where we will give our vacation.
	——Richard F. Dickinson (America: Dreams Recollections and History)
[sp	end+(金)+in+~ing (2)]
28)	People who will spend many hundreds and even thousands of pounds in the course of years in
	making their house beautiful never give a serious thoughts to books.
	——A. G. Gardiner (Do We Buy Books?)
29)	People will not spend ten pounds a year or even five pounds a year in enriching their homes
	with all the best thought of all time. ————————————————————————————————————
[sp	end+(章、願望)+in+~ing (2)]
30)	I have spent a large portion of this chapter in discussing the first category.
	——Alan Turney (Foreigners in Japan)
31)	She really loved her husband and so she had to spend her third wish in removing the sausages
	from his nose. ——Robert J.Dixson (An Approach to Active English)
[s p	end+時+in+動作名詞 (5)]
32)	After an hour or two spent in conversation with his friends he returned to his cottage.
	——Frank R. Stockton (The Lady or Tiger?)
33)	If I wish to become a good pianist, I must struggle to attain this end by spending many hours
	every day in piano practice. ——Peter Milward (<i>Things Otherwise</i>)

34)	the night was spent in feasting and revelry. ——William Tyler Olicott (Myths of the Sun)
35)	Our police forces are not adequate for their jobs. Most of their time is spent not in pursuit of
	criminals but on noise complaints, first aid, ——Donald Keene (<i>Living in Two Countries</i>)
36)	games rooms" are increasing steadily in number for those who want to spend their spare time
	in aimless, witless diversion. ——James kirkups (Students International)
[sp	end+自分+in+忠告 (1)]
37)	Long John was hard at work going from group to group, spending himself in good advice.
	——R. L. Stevenson
	(ノッポのジョンは適切な忠告をしながら集団から集団えとわたり歩き一生懸命がんばった。)
[sp	end+時+in+名詞(状態) (2)]
•	spend+(time) in+(状態) (1)
38)	He spent his time in delightful idleness. ——Frank R. Stockton (<i>The lady or the Tiger</i> ?)
•	spend+(life)+in 名詞(状態) (1)
39)	Pigs spend their entire lives indoors in cramped condition.
	——Early Times (Environmentally Yours)
[sp	end+時+in+場所 (6)]
40)	A Japanese housewife spend a great deal of time in the kitchen.
	——David Burleigh (Japanese and Westerners)
41)	I spent most of our time in Copenhagen at work on a translation.
	——Donald Keene (Confession of a Japanologist)
42)	They do not \mathbf{spend} their whole time closed up \mathbf{in} hotel nor do they \mathbf{spend} it all \mathbf{in} the
	company of lots of other Japanese. ——Brian Moeran (<i>British Images of Japan</i>)
43)	I do not, however, enjoy spending much time in their company, for they usually make me feel
	uncomfortable. ——Mallory Fromm (Culture Without Conflict)
44)	He had to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.
	——Kenneth Kendrick/Brian Powle (Cross-Culture Fantasia)
	10.4 spend+(時、金、生産 、エネルギ)+on+(~ing、動作名詞、場所) (31)
[{ti	ime (13), time and energy (1), time and money (1), day (1), years (1), money (9), dollars
(4),	production (1)} {~ing (10)、動作名詞 (13)、その他の名詞 (8)}]
[A]	time (14), time and energy (1), day (1), years(1)
[sp	end+時+on+動作名詞 (11)]
•	time (10), year (1) / study, telephone, travel など
45)	They have every encouragement to spend their time on anything but study.
	——Peter Milward (<i>Japan and the Japanese</i>)
46)	Young people spend a lot of time on the telephone. ——Natalie Reid (<i>Making Choices</i>)

47)	They don't have the time to work, study, and spend lots of time on sports and sports-related	
	travel. —— <i>Ibid</i> .	
48)	In America it is rare for employees of a company to spend time on company business after	
	hours, and most men return home in time for dinner.	
	——Donald Keene (Living in Two Countries)	
49)	Even those who persist in the habit of serious reading spend less of their time on history than	
	serious readers formerly did. ——B. Russell (<i>History as an Art</i>)	
50)	He spent very little time on his report. ——Norman Wymer (<i>Man Against Nature</i>)	
51)	Too much time, however, should be spent on isolated practice of this kind.	
	——William L. Clark (Spoken American English)	
52)	Most of their time is spent on noise complaints, first aid, and rescuing pet dogs and cats.	
	——Jack Seward (An American's America)	
53)	I attended classes at Kyoto University, but most of my time was spent either on my own studies	
	or in sightseeing.	
54)	He does not spend part of his time and his spiritual energy on contemplation — on wrestling	
	spiritually which the ultimate questions of human life.	
	——Arnold J. Toynbee (Mankind's Future As I Foresee It)	
55)	Usually doctors have to spend many years on their medical studies before they are allowed to	
	treat people. —G. C. Thornley (<i>It's a Mysterious World</i>)	
[sp	end+時+on+場所 (2)]	
•	day、time (各 1) / floor、yacht	
56)	Pam's family spends most of the day on the first floor because the kitchen, the dining room,	
	and the living room are there. ——Blue Sky Books 3	
57)	He began to spend more and more time on his yacht in distant waters.	
	——Willa Cather (<i>The Old Beauty</i>)	
[sp	end+(時間+エネルギ)+on+~ing (1)]	
•	time and energy (1)	
58)	Even in matters of science, we must learn to ask the right questions. It seemed an obvious	
	question to ask how animals inherit the result of their parents' experience, and enormous	
	amounts of time and energy have been spent on trying to give an answer to it.	
	——George Gissing	
[B]	spend+金+on+物、事柄(含動作名詞)(17)	
[mo	oney (10), dollars (3), pounds(3), time and money (1), production (1)]	
[spend+金+on+物、事柄(含動作名詞) (8)]		
•	$\{money\ (4),\ pounds\ (2),\ dollars\ (1),\ production (1)\}\ \{piano,\ her,\ something,\ diamond,\ production (1),\ productio$	
	clothes, defense, defence, armaments}	

59)	People who will spend one hundred and fifty pounds on piano as matter of course will not		
	spend ten pounds year. ——A. G. Gardiner (<i>Do We Buy Books?</i>)		
60)	She forces us to spend our money on her. ——Mallory Fromm (<i>Culture Without Conflict</i>)		
61)	He did not like spend ing money at all, unless it was on something for himself.		
	——W. Somerset Maugham (Of Human Bondage)		
62)	After spendi ng all the money on diamonds, he came back to America to give himself up.		
	——Kenneth Kendrick (Cross-Culture Fantasia)		
63)	The spend millions of dollars on exercise clothes, athletic shoes, fitness programs and health		
	foods. ——Joan McConnell (Understanding the United States)		
64)	What is the use of spend ing untold billions on national defense of a civilization which cannot		
	preserve the cultural values that made it civilization? ——James Kirkup, <i>America Now</i>		
65)	Many analysts claim that one reason that Japan has been able to develop its economy at such a		
	rapid and sustained growth rate is because it is not had to spend very much on defence.		
	——Brian Moeran (British Images of Japan)		
66)	The United States Government has announced that in the coming year, 20 per cent of the total		
	production of the country is to be spent on armaments.		
	——Bertrand Russell (<i>Living in an atomic Age</i>)		
[sp	end+(金、金+時、生産)+on+~ing (9)]		
•	S+spend+O (money (3), pounds (1))+on ~ing (4)		
67)	Industries spend a huge amount of money on telling you about the advantages of product, a		
	service, or an idea. ——(New Horizon English Course 2)		
68)	When he was Lord-Lieutenant he had to spend all his money on giving entertainments to the		
	Irish in Dublin ——Winton S. Churchill (<i>My Early Life</i>)		
69)	We spend a good deal of money, both publicly and as individuals, on having the young taught.		
	——John Wain (Along the Tightrope from Declaration)		
70)	Manufacturers spend thousands of pounds on advertising to encourage us to buy, throw away		
	and replace with new —it keeps the cash registers ringing.		
	——Early Times (Environmentally Yours)		
•	S (money、dollars (各 2))+be+spend on ~ing (4)		
71)	This money was not spent on advertising, as in the U.S., but on parties and gifts for potential		
	supports. ——David Peaty (Global Challenges)		
72)	When I was a student, most of my pocket money was spent on buying beer for the numerous		
	people who beat me at darts. ——Mallory Fromm (<i>Culture Without Conflict</i>)		
73)	When so many billions of dollars are being spent on conquering and destroying a tiny, helpless		
	country like Vietnam, why cannot more money be given to help the poor, the sick, the hungry in		
	America? When billions and indeed" zillions" of dollars are being spent on making bigger		

	and better hydrogen bollios, spacesinps moonships, ABM and Defensive Missile available for		
	education, for libraries, museums, art galleries, city parks and playing field?		
	——James Kirkup (America Now)		
•	S (time and money)+be+spend on \sim ing (1)		
74)	74) In most discount houses, less time and money are spent on displaying goods.		
	——Alison R.Lanier (Living in the U.S.A)		
	10.5 spend+金+on and in+~ing / spend+金 oninonon ~ing、名詞 (2)		
[{p	ounds (2)、money、sterling、pence (各 1) } {consuming、enriching、beer、literature}]		
[sp	end+金+on and in (1)]		
•	money (1)/consuming		
75)	Thirdly, because women play such an active part in spending money on and in consuming		
	commodities, they merely serve to help the Japanese economy towards greater growth.		
	——Brian Moeran (British Images of Japan)		
[sp	end+金+oninonon+~ing, 名詞(1)]		
•	{pounds (2), sterling, pence(各 1)} {enriching, piano, beer, literature}		
76)	People who will spend one hundred and fifty pounds on a piano as a matter of course will not		
	spend ten pounds a year in enriching their homes with all the best thought of all time. We		
	spend two hundred million sterling a year on beer, and I doubt whether we spend two hundred		
	million pence on literature. They think so meanly of their minds as that.		
	——A.G. Gardiner (<i>Many Furrows</i>)		
	10.6 spend+day+over 名詞 (1)		
77)	I have spent the whole day over Lloyd's registers and the files of old papers, following the		
	future career of every vessel which touched at Pondicherry in January and in February in '83		
	——Conan Doyle (<i>The Five Orange Pips</i>)		
	10.7 spend+預金、財産+to-infinitive (2)		
78)	Americans spent great fortunes to imitate European art.		
	——Douglas Stout (American Potpouri)		
79)	They spent all their savings to buy the cow. ——Paul Gallico (<i>Ludmila</i>)		
	10.8 spend+時+with+人、帽子 (4)		
[{tin	ne (3), hours (1)} {persons (3), hat (1)}]		
80)	I do not want to spend too long a time with boring people,		
	——W. S. Maugham (<i>The Summing Up</i>)		
81)	Patients often have to wait because delays occur if the doctor spend s more time with patient		
	than the time allowed. ——James House (Get it! Use it!).		
82)	He spent hours with her. ——Richard Musman (<i>Catch a Thief</i>)		
83)	She was spending a long time with the hat. ——Liam O'Flaherty (Going into Epill)		

■ spend+時+at+(仕事、行動、本、楽器、映画) (9)

[{day (3)、time、hours、evening (各 2)} {work (3)、book (2)、activity (1)、harpsichord、movie、全文内容 (1)]

- ➤ spend+(time)+at+名詞 (2) spend+(hours)+at+名詞 (2)
- ➤ spend+(day)+at+名詞 (3)
 - ◆ spend+(evening)+at+名詞 (2)

■ spend+金+for+名詞 (3)

[{money, nickel, rent (各 1)} {color, bottle, bar, purpose(各 1)}]

- > spend+(money)+for+名詞 (2)
- > spend+(rent)+for +名詞 (1)

10.9 spend+(時、金、章、願望、努力、自分)+in (~ing、動作名詞、状態、場所) (34)

[{time (16), life (3), hour, day, pound 各(2), winter, year, night, time and effort, effort, chapter, wish, himself 各(1) } {~ing (20), 動作名詞 (3), 状態名詞 (5), 場所 (6)}]

- 時など(time、life その他 (27)+time and effort (1) = 28 (82.3%) / effort、chapter、wish、himself (各 1 計 4) (11.8%) / pound (2) (5.9%))
- in (~ing (20) (58.8%) / 動作名詞 (3) (8.8%) 状態名詞 (5) (14.8%)、場所(6) 17.6%))
- spend+時+in+~ing (14) (41.1%)
 - > spend+(time)+ in+~ing (8) (23.5%)
 - \rightarrow spend+(life)+in+~ing (2) (5.9%)
 - ightharpoonup spend+(day)+in+~ing (2) (5.9%)
 - \triangleright spend+(winter / year)+in+ \sim ing (2) (5.8%)
- spend+(時+努力・努力)+ in+~ing (2) (5.9 %)
- spend+(4)+in+~ing (2) (5.9 %)
- spend+(章、願望)+~ing(2)(5.9%)
- spend+(時、自分)+動作名詞など (6) (17.7 %)
 - ➤ spend+時+in+動作名詞 (5) (14.7%)
 - > spend+自分+in+忠告 (1) (3.0%)
- spend+時+in+名詞(状態) (2) (5.9 %)
 - > spend+(time) in+(状態) (1) (3.0%)
 - > spend+(life)+in 名詞(状態) (1)(2.9%)
- spend+時+in+場所 (6) (18.1%)

10.10 spend+(時、金、生産、エネルギ)+on+(~ing, 動作名詞、場所) (31)

[{time (13)、time and energy (1)、time and money (1)、day (1)、years (1)、money (9)、dollars (4)、production (1)} {~ing (10)、動作名詞 (13)、その他の名詞 (8)}]

- [A] spend+時+on+(~ing, 動作名詞、場所)(14)(45.1%)
 - time (12), time and energy, day (1), years(1)
- spend+時+on+動作名詞 (11) (35.4%)
 - ➤ {time (10), year (1)} {study, telephone, travel など}
- spend+時+on+場所 (2) (6.5%)
 - {day、time (各 1)} {floor、yacht}
- spend+(時間+エネルギ)+on+~ing (1) (3.2%)
 - ➤ {time and energy}
- [B] spend+金+on+物、事柄(含動作名詞) (17) (54.9%)

money (10), dollars (3), pounds(3), time and money (1), production (1)

- spend+金+on+物、事柄(含動作名詞)(8)(25.8%)
 - \(\)\ \{\)\ money (5), pounds (2), dollars (1), production(1)\} \{\)\ piano, her, something, diamond, clothes, defense, defence, armaments\}
- spend+(金、金+時)+on+~ing (9) (29.0%)
 - > S+spend+O (money (3), pound (1))+ON ~ing (4) (12.9%)
 - ➤ S (money, dollars (各 2) (12.9%), time and money (1) (13.2%))+be+spend on ~ing (5) (16.1%)

10.11 spend+金+on and in+~ing / spend+金 on...in...on...on ~ing、名詞 (2)

[{pounds (2), money, sterling, pence (各 1)} {consuming, enriching, beer, literature}]

- spend++on and in (1)
 - ➤ {money(1)} {consuming}
- spend+金+on...in ...on...on+~ing、名詞(1)
 - ➤ {pounds (2), sterling, pence (各 1)} {enriching, piano, beer, literature}

10.12 spend+day+over 名詞 (1)

I have spent the whole day over Lloyd's registers and the files of old papers, following the future.

- 10.13 spend+預金、財産+to-infinitive (2)
- 10.14 spend+時+with+人、帽子 (4)

[{time (3), hours (1)} {persons (3), hat (1)}]

10.15 in の特質

大修館『続·英語語法大事典』

無い場合	ある場合
軽快、流動的、活動的、口語調、連続使用可	慎重で的確。重々しく文語的
懸垂分詞 (dangling participle) も可	~ing に重点が置かれる
アメリカ英語的	イギリス英語的

10.16 on と in の特徴

新島通弘『英語表現活用辞典』

on の使用	in の使用
多くの場合「金銭を物品に費やす」場合	普通の場合は、「時間を費やす」の意のとき。
「時間」の場合でもある事柄そのものに時	だだし、金銭の場合でも「飲食物のような消
間を費やす場合。on ~ing は「目的意識	耗品を買うのに費やす」という場合は in が用
をもって費やす」、「…に使う」「過ごす」、	いられることもある。
「…するのに(時間・費用が)かかる、必要	
とされる」の意。	

11 S+V+(prep.) up/down+N $(- \neg \sigma \tau - \beta)$

今、弓プレス編アメリカの新聞掲載の「人生案内」: Abigail Van Buren(米)(Dear Abby II)を読んでいますが、その p. 2 に下記の文があります。

"A friend of mine (I'll call him Charlie) is in the hospital. Here's what happened: Charlie **was walking down the street** listening to music on his headset when a car hit him..."

"A friend of mine **was walking down the street** reading your column when a car hit him." これは投稿者の友人が街路を歩いている時に起こった事故のことを述べたものです。 down/(up)+N に関心があり、目にしたものを carding するように心がけているのですが、これを機会に私のコーパスにあるものの実態を調べました。

- up / down / along the road について
 LECE (3) (1995)は、"= further along the road"、OALD (6) (2000)は、"= further on the same road"、MACMILLAN (2002)は、"= further on the road"と説いています。
- up one's street について

COBUILD (2) (1995)、(3) (2001)は、"If a job or activity is **up your street**, it is the kind of job or activity that you are very interested in" と述べ、それぞれ "She loved it, this was just ** up **. She loved it, this was just her street." を例示しています。

CIDE (1995)は、"If something is **up your street** (esp. **Am** up your alley), you are interested in it or you enjoy doing it: Carpentry isn't really **up my street.** I'd rather pay someone else to do it." としています。

アメリカの言語学者 Joan McConnel (Language, Culture, and Communication pp. 21-22, 1992, 成美堂)は、up と down を概括して、"**Up** implies positive values, while **down** expresses negative ones...**Up** describes consciousness, while **down** refers to inconsciousness... Good is **up*... Bad is **down**. **Up** describes growth and speed...**Down** connotes decline and slowness." と述べてから、"The **up/down** metaphor also reflects the typical American optimism that the future will be better than the past." のように典型的なアメリカ人の特性に言及しています。氏 は up は 正 (+)、down は 負 (-)のイメージがあることを示していますが、下記の前置詞の場合も同様なことが言えるケースが多いことを知ります。

OED (2) (sv. prep. up)に、"1. Denoting or implying movement 2. Denoting location"とあり、An ESL/EFL (The Grammar Book) (2) (p.424, 1999)は、"The prepositions **up and down** access a domain of oriental physical space, in which they denote positive and negative polarity, respectively." と説いています。along と同義的に用いられる場合、空間的または、心理的に up は 上方、down は下方およびその方向を意味しますが、このことから、一般的に、「遠近画法の奥行きおよびそれへの動きが up、反対が down」、「中心点(話し手、話題、縄張り、都会、大学など)およびそこへの動きが up、反対方向が down」、「商業地区 (downtown)は down、住宅地区 (uptown)は up(アメリ

カ)」、「地理的北が up、南が down」などを表わすと言われています。 (参考)

• Randolph Quirk et al (A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language, pp. 1448-1449) (1985)

up/down について

"The contrasting phrases **up** (the street) and **down** (the road) are interesting in making spatial reference not necessarily in terms of relative elevation (though this is not excluded). The immediate contrast is in terms of orientation again: **up** indicating an approach towards the speaker (and his home), **down** indicating the converse. The cluster of spatial reference provides a continuous set of coordinates in relation to a base (the speaker's home, though this is merely a pragmatic implication) as well as a coherent account of the movements involved in the narrative." "[note] in a text where it was known that a physical slope was involved, **up / down (the street)** would be used with respect to this absolute and objective physical feature, and it would outweigh personal orientation. The latter could be expressed by alternative means: **'She went (away) up the street' **; **'They came down the street' **. Contrast also: 'They hurried **up** Fifth Avenue'(ie. away from 'downtown Manhattan)'; 'They walked **along** Fifth Avenue'(neutral as to direction)''

 Rodney Hudddleston/Geoffrey K. Pullum (The Cambridge Grammar of English Language) (p.653, 2002)

"When **up** and **down** are used geographically, the choice between them are sometimes arbitrary. Movement along such linear spaces as streets or railway tracks on level ground is sometimes expressed with **up** and sometimes with **down **. Naturally, there is a slope the direction of increasing elevation is much more likely to be called **up the street **,but in many circumstances what one person refers to as a short distance **up the street** might be referred to by another as a short distances **down the street.**

Where the choice is not arbitrary, there are various different geographical metaphors motivating uses of **up** and **down** in connection with travel to towns, cities, etc., they sometimes conflict.

People in England often use the phrase **going to London** or **going up to town,** even though t his may involve travel south. In addition, universities, in particular t the long-established universities of Oxford and Cambridge, are conceptualised as if they towered over the surrounding area: attending Oxford or Cambridge is generally ally called **going up to university**, and being expelled from those universities is called **being sent down *."

- Larousse English Dictionary (1996)の up/down の項
- go up to Seattle = to go north from one's home, etc. to Seattle
- to go/run up to sb = to go/run toward sb and stop

- to go up a hill = to go from a lower place on a hill to a higher on"
 (例文)Her office is just up the corridor from mine.
- to walk up a street = to walk along a street toward its far end
- to sail up a river = to sail along a river in the direction that leads away from the sea
- I'm going down to the mall = I'm going from here to the mall
- to travel down to the street = to travel south from one's home or another place to the coast (例文) We traveled down to London together.
- to run down the hill = to run down the top to the bottom of the hill
 (例文) She came down the stairs to meet me./Tears ran down his face.
- to go along the river in the direction of the sea

安井稔・長谷川ミサ子『私家版英和辞典 (sv. up/down)』(1997)(開拓社)に次のごとく記されています。「(up) She went up the street.(彼女は通りを上がって行った)、(down) They came down the street.(彼らは通りを下りて行った)運動を表わす動詞とともに用いられる場合 up は話者(を中心とする場所)のほうへ近づくことを、down は話者(を中心とする場所)から離れていくことを意味するが、前者は地形が上り坂などである場合上るという意味の方が優先し、後者は地形が下り坂などある場合下りるという意味の方が優先する」として、さらにそれぞれ次の例文を示しています。

"They hurried up Fifth Avenue." (彼らは五番街を急いで歩いて行った) = 「マンハッタンから北へ向かって」の意。"They sauntered down the street." (彼らは五番街をぶらぶら歩いていった) = 「マンハッタンのほうへ向かい南へ」の意。

しかし坂が上り坂か、下り坂かは明示されなくそれはあくまで話者または筆者の意識の中にあり、聞く者、読者にとっては不明なことが多く、また、中心点を意識した「心的」上下の含意の存在も不明なことも多々あります。

日本語の場合、列車、電車時刻表の「上り、下り」などは例外として、上洛、下洛、上京、下国、上白、下白、参上、言上など現代では、封建時代の遺物的響きを持つように見なされることが多いように思いますが、英語のup/downと比較して両言語間の温度差を感じます。 (参考)

数年まえイギリスに行った時あちこちで列車の時刻表を集めてみましたが、"up train"、"down train"と表示したものは見当たりませんでした。日本の時刻表には今でも「上り、下り」と書かれているのが普通ですが、もとはイギリスのものが導入されたと聞いています。彼我の違いを知り興味を引きました。

水平方向での移動の場合でもalongよりもup/down+Nのほうが好まれると言う英米の知人が多いのですが、私もそれと同じ印象を持っています。これは英語国民は対象点や、目的地点にたいする空間的、心的上下を意識することの表われのように思われます。論理性、合理性に基づく中心点を常に意識していて、それをupやdownで表わすことによる所作ではないでしょうか。民主主義の

風潮が高まるにつれて、上下を表わす表現が衰微しつつある日本語とは対照的に,自然態で使われている英語表現。類義語である 英語の up/down と日本語の上・下を対比して、日英両語に見る文化的、歴史的、民族的イメージと思考の相違を見る思いがして興味がひかれます。

かねがね この S+V up/down+N に興味・関心があったのもこのことだったかもしれません。これを機会に実態を見てみました。個人の carding の欠陥として収集の数が少なく(104 例)、普遍性に欠けることは否めませんが、一つ、一つの文例にあたり分析することによりある程度遺伝子情報が見出されることを信じつつ、まとめてみました。一つの資料として紹介します。

Walk up/down the street のような場合、空間的・心理的上下の動きが不明なことが多々あります。 しかし、勾配を表わす climb up/down N、fall down N、V up/down (a slope、a hill など)のケースでは特に空間の上下の動きが明示されます。しかし、この場合でもそれに加えて到達点にたいする心理的(あるいは更なる空間的)上下の概念も含意されているか否かは不明です。

- ※「勾配」とは、「上下」が空間・心理に属するいうこと(北南の方角も含む)。
- ※S は sense または logical subject。V は actional または statal verb。 生物は人間を含む。
- ※down を先にしたのは実例が up よりも多いため。

11.1 (**prep.**) down (57)

[S(=生物 (28)、生物以外 (4))+V+down+N(「勾配」不明) (32)]

(米人 (20)、英人(11)、アイルランド人 (1))

[S(=冒頭に挙げた 2 例を含め、生物 (11)、生物以外 (0))+walk down the street (11)] (米人(10)、英人 (1))

- 1) I **walked down the street **, giggling. ——Douglas Stout, 米人 (*American Potpurri*) (街を歩いていた (S=I)。)
- 2) Scott and Tsuneo, a Japanese student, **are walking down the street** when Tsuneo sees a Garage Sale on the telephone pole.
 - ——S.Andrew Kurokawa, 米人 (Common Misunderstandings in Japanese-American) (街をあるいていた (S = Scott, Tsuneo)。)
- **Walking down street after street **, I examined each car closely and was greatly relieved to see a small green car just behind an old cart. ——Natalie Reid, 米人 (*Making Choices*) (街から街へと歩いていて (S = I)。)
 この句型で street after street はあまり見受けないように思います。
- 4) If you have unintentionally bumped into someone while **walking down the street **, an apology is definitely considered mandatory.
 - ——Wayne I. Phillips, 米人 (Cultural Corners: America and Japan) (街を歩いているとき (S = you)。)
- 5) **Walk down any shopping street** and you will see this sort of "Japlish" splashed across

clothes.

——Vanessa Hardy, 英人 (Separate and Equal: British English and American English) (どんなショッピング街を歩いても (S = you)。)

6) Charlie **was walking down the street ** listening to music on his headset when a car hit him.

——Abigail Van Buren,米人 (Dear Abby)

(街を歩いていた (S = Charlie)。)

7) A friend of mine **was walking the street ** reading your column when a car hit him.

——*Ibid*.

(街路を歩いていた (S = a friend of mine)。)

8) In Tokyo I am not worried even if I **walk down a dark street** late at night.

——Donald Keene, 米人 (Living in Two Countries)

(暗い街路を歩く (S = I)。)

9) They saw a woman **walking down the street.**

——John Dennis, 米人 (Stories Behind English)

(街路を歩いている (S = a woman)。)

[S (= 生物 (4)、生物以外 (0))+walk down +(street 以外の N) (4)]

(米人 (3)、英人 (1))

- 10) He was delighted not to hear any noise coming from the room as he **walked down the hallway.**

 ——Douglas Stout, 米人 (American Potpourri)
 (廊下を歩いていた (S = he)。)
- 11) A young woman **is walking down a sidewalk.**

 ——William Gudykunst, 米人 (American Communication Patterns)
 (歩道を歩いている (S = woman)。)
- 12) The second man was tall and heavy and **walked with a cane down the slippery stones** of Gutter Alley.

 ——John Dennis, 米人 (Stories Behind English)
 (滑りやすい石畳を歩いた (S = man)。)
- 13) She took the little golden key, and unlocked the door that led into the garden,...then she **walked down the little passage.

—— Lewis Carroll, 英人 (Alice's Adventure in Wonderland)

(せまい通路を歩いた (S = she)。)

[S(生物 (5)、生物以外 (0)+(walk 以外 V) down the street (5)]

(米人 (4)、英人 (1))

14) I quickly finished my beer and biscuits and **hurried back down the street**to the station.

——Alan Booth, 英人 (A Journey Through Japan)

(路地を急いで戻った (S = I)。)

15) Boisterous voters, intoxicated with victory, **were parading down the streets** and across the

——Dale Carnegie, 米人 (Little Known Facts about Well known People) (街路を行進していた (S = voters)。) 16) ...the men **shuffled down the dusty street**,... ——John Dennis, 米人 (Stories Behind English) (埃っぽい路地を足を引きづりながら歩いた (S = men)。) 17) They can feel the spirit of the Renaissance as they **wander down the narrow streets**. ——Joan McConnell, 米人 (*Understanding Europe*) (ふらふらと狭い路地を歩いているとき (S = they 人々)。) 18) I ... **ran down the street** trying to catch up with him. — E.Caldwell, 米人 (My Old Man) (通りを走っていった (S = I)。) [S(生物 (5)、生物以外 (1))+(walk 以外 V) down the road (6)] (米人 (2)、英人 (4)) 19) I **went back down the road** of the coast. ——Alan Booth, 英人 (A Journey Through Japan) (海辺の路を戻っていった (S = I)。) 20) The boy went out very quietly to **bring some coffee and all the way down the road** he was ——E. Hemingway, 米人 (The Old Man and the Boy) crying. (少年は泣きながら道を歩いていた (S = boy)。) 21) As the boy **went out the door and down the worn coral rock road**. −ibid. (やつれたサンゴ礁のみちをあるいた (S = boy)。) 22) Don't ask me why I love the King's Road (there is only one King's Road: **down which Charles II travelled** to call upon his Nell in Chelsea); **travel down it* yourself from Eaton Square to World' End. -—Alan A. Milne, 英人 (Year In, Year Out) (キングスロードを歩いた (S = Charles II)。) (心に思ったように道を歩いたらよい (S = Charles II)。) 23) There was a large bomb site **down the road, on which I used to play with my friend Howard. ——Stephen Hawking, 英人 (Black Holes and Baby Universes) (道路に爆弾の落ちた大きな穴があった (S = a large bomb site)。) [S (= 生物 (3)、生物以外 (3))+(walk 以外の V)+N (6)] (米人 (1)、英人 (2)、アイルランド人 (1)) 24) Packets from hundreds of sources are mixed up by the computer and **shoved the pipe** in a iumble. ——Christopher Anderson, 英人 (*The Internet {Economist}*) (筒のなかを押されるように進む (S = Packets)。)

25) In response to a request, the machines parcel up data in a lot of packets with an address on each

——*Ibid*.

one, and **send them blindly down the nearest.**

(目が眩むようなスピードで住所に最も近いところに運ぶ (S = machine)。)

26) The people **filed out after them, down the yard** and on to the road, like a funeral procession.

—— Liam O'Flaherty, 愛蘭人 (*Going into Exile*)

(列をなし中庭をとおって進んだ (S = people)。)

- 27) As we **strolled leisurely down a quiet country path,** I saw 'sakura' wherever I looked.

 ——Joan McConnell,米人 (*Language and Culture in the 21st Century*)

 (静かな田舎道をぶらぶら歩いた (S = we)。)
- 28) When I step out of my New York apartment, the first words I hear are usually not English. My neighbours on one side are Italian. On the other they are Polish. **Down the corridor live a family** of Greeks.
 - ——Vanessa Hardy, 英人 (Separate and Equal: British English and American English) (回廊の向こうの方に住んでいる (S = a family)。)
- 29) There was a large pool all around her about four inches deep and **reaching half down the hall.**

 ibid.

 (広間の中ほどまで広がっていた (S = a large pool)。)

[S (= 生物 (15)、無生物 (6))+V+down+N (勾配、下方向「空間」心理 (5)) (25)] (米人 (13)、英人 (9)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、カナダ人 (1)、不明 (1))

- **S** (= 生物 (4)、生物以外 (0))+climb down+N (4) (米人 (2)、英人 (1)、カナダ人 (1))
- 30) Haledjiun and the Inspector **climbed down the two hundred foot cliff ** after him.

 ——Donald Sobol,米人 (Two-Minute Mysteries)
 (200 フイートの断崖をよじ降りた (S = Haledjiun and the Inspector「空間」)。)
- 31) Two scientists **climbed partway down the center of the volcano.**

 ——(The Voice of America)

 (噴火口の中央部をよじ降りた (S = Two scientists「空間」)。)
- 32) Throwing away his flowers, he **climbed down the side of the dike** and thrust his finger into the tiny hole.

 ——Marius Barbeau, カナダ人 (*The Old and New*) (堤防の側面をよじ降りた (S = he「空間」)。)
- 33) I was amazed to see her climb down backwards, just like a human **climbing down a ladder!

 **

 ——Itan Watson, 英人 (*Japan: A Cat's Eye View*)
 (梯子をよじ降りる (S = a human「空間」)。)

[S (= 生物 (13)、生物以外 (8))+(climb 以外の V)+down+N (21)]

(米人 (11)、英人 (8)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、不明 (1))

34) I **raced down the lane** to the creek.

——Erskin Caldwell,米人 (My Old Man and the Grass Widow) (入り江の方へ小道を急いだ (S = I「空間」)。)

- 35) Becky snatched at the book to close it, and had the hard luck to** tear the pictured plate half down the middle.**

 ——Mark Twain, 米人 (*Tom Sawyer's Noble Deed*)

 (口絵の中央部を上から下へ半分ひびをいれる (S = I「空間」)。)
- 36) Wayne and Cheryl Lord **walked carefully down the steep track** from the Appalachian Trail.

 —— Richard Musman, 英人 (*Background to English-speaking Countries*)
 (急勾配の小道を降りていった (S = Wayne and Cheryl Lord「空間」)。)
- 37) Britain's old enemy, France, **had colonies in Canada and forts down the Ohio and Mississippi rivers.**

 ——Herbert Passin, 米人 (*Language and Cultural Pattern*)

 (オハイオ川とミシシッピー川の下流に (S = enemy「空間」)。)
- 38) It was decided the prisoners should be fed, by force, by **putting tubes down their throats **and pouring liquid food into their stomachs.

——Elizabeth Curry, 英人 (Women in Society) (喉からチューブを入れて (S = prisoners 「空間」)。)

- 39) The basket **floated down the river.** Finally it stopped at the mouth of the river near which an old mother wolf was living. ——William L. Clark (*The Junior Crown 【English Course 3 】*) (川を流れていった (S = the basket「空間」)。)
- 40) With a little 'sake' "down the hatch" may do this very merrily.

——Douglas Stout, 米人 (American Potpurri) (一気に飲んでこのことをした (S = this「空間」)。)

"down the hatch" = which is common among patrons of bars, is from the jargon of sailing men, the mouth is regarded as analogous to the hatches down which cargo is lowered. (*Morris Dictionary of Words and Phrases*)

- 41) She was just in time to see it (= the Rabbit) **go down a large rabbit-hole** under the hedge. The next minute, Alice went down after it...Alice could not stop herself from **falling down a very deep well.**

 ——Lewis Carroll (Alice's Adventure in Wonderland) (生き垣の下のうさぎの巣穴にとびこむ (S = the rabbit/Alice「空間」)。) (深い井戸に落ちて行く (S = pool「空間」)。)
- 42) The Mock Turtle sighed deeply. With tears **running down his cheeks,** he went down.

——*ibid*.

(頬をつたって落ちる (S = tears 「空間」)。)

- 43) There were doors all round the hall, but they were all locked; and when Alice **had been all the way down one side** and up the other, trying every door, she **walked sadly down the middle,** wondering how she was ever to get out again. —— *Ibid*. ((入り口から入り) 広間の片側から反対側まで歩いた (S = Alice「空間」心理)。) (広間の中央部を歩いた (S = she「空間」心理)。)
- 44) "Ah, me," he said, "in that house is a horrible witch who flew at me, and **scratched me down

the face** with her long fingers."

——作者不詳 (Stories for Boys and Girls)
(顔を引っ掻いた (S = witch「空間」)。)

- 45) Money and work **are far down the list of priorities **.

 ——Wayne I. Phillips, 米人 (Ways of Life America and Japan)
 (優先権リストのはるか下方に位置している (S = money and work「空間」)。)
- 46) English food names come from many sources, and tracing their origins **leads us down interesting back roads of history.**

 ——Susan J. Tripp, 米人 (Ways of Words)

 (興味ある歴史の裏側にたどりつく (S = tracing their origins 「空間」心理)。)
- 47) The number of public bathhouses in Tokyo as of July 1988 **stood at 2.062,down 37** since the beginning of the year, ... ——Wayne I. Phillips 米人 (*Ways of Life: America and Japan*) (数が 37 軒を下回った (S = the number of public bathhouse「空間」)。)
- 48) Fau Brechenmacher, **following her husband down the room** after greeting the bridal party, knew that she was going to enjoy herself.
 - ——Katherine Mansfield、ニュージーランド人 (Frau Bechnmacher Attends a Wedding)(入り口から奥の方へと)夫のあとにいていって (S = Frau Brechenmacher「空間」心理)。)
- 49) I **hurried down the steps** ...trying to catch up with him ——E. caldwell (*My Old Man*) (階段を急いで下りた (S = I「空間」)。)
- 50) I just **went down the country** a little way. —— *Ibid*. (家を離れて旅をした(S = I「空間」**心理**)。)
- 51) **Down the dark future,** though long generations, the echoing sounds **grow** fainter and grow fainter and then cease. ——H. W. Longfellow, 米人 (*Arsenal at Springfield*) (暗い未来へ(こだまが)響く (S = the echoing sounds)。)
- 52) By 1970, girls were wearing mini-skirts that **stopped half-way down their thighs**, and blouses cut low at the neck.

 ——M. Stitt (*The Generation Gap*) (ももから下半分ばかりのところでとまっていた (S = mini-skirts「空間」)。)

11.2 (prep.) up (28)

[S(= 生物 (8)、無生物 (0))+V+up+N([勾配]不明)(8)]

(米人 (4)、英人 (1)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、不明 (1))

- S+walk up the street (2)
- 53) Then I **walked up the street**, gazing about till, near the market-house, I met a boy with bread.

 ——Ibid.

 (街路を歩いた (S = I)。)
- 54) Then refreshed I **walked again up the street**, which by this time clean-dressed people in it, who were all walking the same way.

 (再び街路を歩いていった (S = I)。)

- S+(walk 以外の V) up the street (1)
- 55) The two **started up the street**, arm in arm. ——O. Henry, 米人 (*After Twenty Years*) (街路を歩きだした (S = The two [people])。)
- S+walk up+ (street 以外の N) (3)
- 56) When we **walked up the long gangway**, and showed our tickets to an officer, it was like going to the movies. —— (Revised Jack and Betty) (長い通路を歩いた (S = we)。)
- 57) We could not help laughing as you **walked up the room** with the white tape of your petticoat showing!

——Katherine Mansfield, ニュージーランド人 (*Frau Brechenmacher Attends*) (部屋の奥へと歩いた (S = you)。)

- 58) He and Clem had been **walking up the road** together that afternoon on their way to the filling station.

 ——E.Caldwell, 米人 (*Kneel to the Rising Sun*) (道を歩いた (S = He and Clem)。)
- その他の V と N (1)
- 59) The policeman on patrol **moved up the avenue ** impressively.

——O. Henry, 米人 (After Twenty Years)

(大通りに現れた (S = policeman)。)

- V省略 (1)
- 60) **Up the road,** in his shack, the old man was sleeping again.

—— E. Hemingway, 米人 (The Old Man and the Sea)

(道路の向こうに (S = old man)。)

[S(= 生物 (15)、生物以外 (3))+V+up+N ([勾配]上方向「空間 (13)、心理 (3)」) (21)] (米人(10)、英人 (7)、不明 (4))

- **S** (= 生物 (6)、生物以外 (2))+climb up+ N (8) (米人 (1)、英人 (4)、不明 (3))
- 61) After they give up trying to learn Japanese, their attempts to acquire some knowledge of the country where they live may include a trip to Kyoto,** a climb up Mt.Fuji**, a visit to see Kabuki, ...

 ——Jack Seward, 米人 (Spoken American English)
 ※climb は actional noun。意味上こでは "they climb up Mt. Fuji"の意
 (富士山に登る (S = they = Japanese「空間」)。)
- 62) Many of the miners were not strong enough to **climb up the long tunnel** in the Bank.

 ——Norman Wymer,英人 (*Lucky to be Alive*)

 (長いトンネルを上るだけの体力がある(S = miners「空間」 奥行き、心理)。)
- 63) We **climb up a narrow steel stairway** to a metal platform ten feet above the floor.

——(New Method English Readers 1)

(鋼鉄の階段を昇る (S = We「空間」)。)

- 64) The two children **climbed up a tall tree.** But tiger could climb very fast. I could climb the fastest of all the tigers in the world. ——(New Crown English Series 2) (高い木を登る (S = tiger「空間」)。)
- 65) I simply **climbed up the Wistaria **on to our roof and jumped across on to the upstairs balcony of the next door.

 ——Ian Watson, 英人 (*Japan : Cat's Eye View*) (屋根までフジの花づたいに上った (S = I「空間」)。)
- 66) Just after midnight, the students **climbed up a rusty pipe ...**

 ——L. G. Alexander, 英人 (Comprehension, Precis and Composition)
 (錆びた銅管を上っていった (S = students「空間」)。)
- 67) An old vine **climbed up the wall.**

 —--(New Prince Readers 3c)

 (壁を上方に広がっていた (S = vine「空間」)。)
- 68) The hillside **up which these steps **climb is buttressed with a stone wall which is very Japanese in appearance. ——Alan Turney, 英人 (Foreigners in Japan) (丘陵の斜面を上っている (S = steps「空間」)。)
- S (= 生物 (9)、生物以外 (3))+V (climb 以外のもの) up+N (13) (米人 (9)、英人 (3)、不明(1))
- 69) Stranger: I've a car, m'sieu'. I leave it **up the road.**

 Harry: There's no likely to be much traffic. It'll be right if it doesn't get snowed up.

 ——L. Du Grade Peach (*The Stranger*)

 ※道路の向こうに置きっぱなしにしてある it と up the road は nexus 関係)

 (S = it 空間「心理」)
- 70) There is **a road eight miles from London (up which I have walked)** sometimes my way to golf. I think it is called Acacia Road. ——A. A. Milne, 英人 (*Acacia Road*) (ゴルフ場に通じる道を歩いた (S = I「空間」心理「ゴルフ場が関心の中心」)。)
- 71) Thick forests **stretched from banks up the slopes** of pleasant hills.

 —— (Union Readers 1)

 (敬斜面を上方へと広がっていた (S = forests「空間」)。)
- 72) The lift was not yet get running, so he **went up two flights of stairs** and rang at their door.

 ——Willa Cather,米人(*The Old Beauty*)
 (階段を 2 つ上った(S = he「空間)。」
- 73) So the Judge said **one year up the river**.

 ——William Saroyan, 米人 (*Inhale and Exhale*)

 (一年刑務所行きだ (S = he「空間」)。)

 (川の上流「ここでは刑務所」) ※one year の前に he will be が省略されていると見なして
 down the river (OED)の説明 "orig. to Sing Sing prison, situated up the Hudson River from the

city of New York; hence fig., to or in prison. Colloq. (orig. US)"

74) When Storyville was close down in 1917, merry musician had to leave the city to find work. This exodus **followed the riverboat traffic up the Mississippi River **.

—— D. Halberstam, 米人 (The Next Century)

(後をたどってミシシッピー川を上った (S = exodus「空間」)。)

- 75) They **walked up the road** together to the old man's shack and went in through its open door.

 ——E. Hemingway, 米人 (*The Old Man and the Sea*)

 (海辺の上方にあった老人の小屋へ通じる道を上った (S = They = 老人と少年「空間」)。)
- 76) He started to climb again and at the top he fell and lay for some time with the mast across his shoulder...Finally he put the mast down and stood up. He picked the mast up and put it on his shoulder and **started up the road.**

 ——Ibid.

 (彼はまた坂を登りはじめた、そして登りつめたところで倒れ、マストを肩に掛けたまましばらく倒れていた。そのうちマストを下に置いて立ちあがった。それからマストを持ち上げ、肩に掛け

※この文では最初の He started to climb again …に始まることから、started up the road は「道を登りはじめた」ことが分かる。

- 77) Still she went on growing, and she **put** one arm out of the window, and **one foot up the chimney.**

 ——Lewis Carroll, 英人 (*Alice's Adventures in Wonderland*)

 (煙突から片足を突き出した (S = She「空間」)。)
- 78) In all age groups, ** 700,000 procedures were done last year up 70 percent ** in four years.

 —— (International Herald Tribune, November 30, 1998)

 (手術は 70%増しになった (S = all age group「空間」)。)
- 79) Just then Ma heard some of the women **coming up the street.**

—— E. Caldwell, 米人 (My Old Man)

(通りをこちらへやってくる (S = women「空間」心理)。)

て道を登り始めた (S = he = 老人「空間」)。)

- 80) A block tower **up the line** a little was starred with green lights.
 - ——J. E. Steinbeck, 米人 (The Long Valley)

(線路を少し向こうへいった (S = a block tower「空間」心理)。)

81) **Part way up the valley from Steg**, you will find the shrine of Saint Ludmila.

——Paul Gallico, 英人 (Ludmila)

(ステイク村から谷をいくぶん登っていくと (S = you「空間」)。)

11.3 (prep.) up and down+N (17)

[S(=生物(6)、生物以外(3))+V+up and down+N(=《勾配》不明/平面【前後左右に広がりのある所】)(9)

(米人 (0)、英人 (6)、アイルランド人 (1)、不明 (2))

- N = room(2)
- 82) The merry old gentleman **trotted up and down the room** with a stick.

——(New Prince Readers 1)

(部屋の中を急ぎ足で歩きまわった (S = gentleman)。)

83) The dwarf pulled his cap hard over his brows, and **took two turns, of three feet long, up and down the room**, lifting his lifts up very high and setting them down very hard.

——John Ruskin, 英人 (The King of the olden River)

(部屋の3フィートの距離をあちこち、2度行きもどりつした (S = dwarf)。)

- N = country(3)
- 84) There are even more relics of the Middle Ages, particularly the abbey and castle ruins **scattered up and down the country**.

——Peter Milward, 英人 (Happenings and Non-Happenings) (国のあちこちに点在する (S = more relics)。)

- 85) There are hundreds of village churches, no less charming, **scattered up and down the country** as a precious legacy from the Middle Ages. -—Ibid. (国のあちこちにある (S = village churches)。)
- 86) Behind their variety, their glitter and their charm as they appear on the store counters, is the less than glittering **appearance up and down the country** of factories.

——Ibid. (My Two Island Homes)

(国中いたるところに見うける光景 (S = glittering appearance)。)

- N = world(2)
- 87) He had no ties in England, no friends: he could **go up and down the world** for years, learning the beauty and the wonder and the variedness of life.

-W. Somerset Maugham, 英人 (Of Human Bondage) (世界のあちこちを訪ねる (S = he)。)

88) He sat on September's shoulder and ate out of her hand and sang her the beautiful songs he had learned while he **was flying up and down the fair places of the world.**

——Ibid. (Princess September)

(世界の美しいところを飛び回っていた (S = Princess September)。)

- N = shore (2)
- 89) My brother and I like to catch crabs and lobsters on the beach. My cousin sometimes takes us in a little boat to catch lobsters. We **row up and down the shore** watching the floats in the water that tell where a trap is. ——(Jack and Betty)

(海辺で船を漕いで行き来する (S = We)。)

90) Suppose it takes the form of running at the top of our speed to **kick a ball up and down a field **. ——G. B. Shaw, 愛蘭人 (The Tyranny of Nature)

(ボールを蹴って野原を走る (S = we が省略)。)

[S (= 生物 (6)、生物以外 (2))+V+up and down+N (《勾配》両方向「空間」/線状・細長のもの) (8)]

(米人 (3)、英人 (5))

91) Often elms, sycamores, or maples **cast shades up and down the avenue **.

—— Douglas Stout, 米人 (American Potpurri)

(大通りに木の影を投げている (S = elms, sycamores or maples)。)

92) They were led up to the long-house —and to the beating of drums and gongs **walked up and down the whole length of it** in long procession.

——W. S. Maugham, 英人 (The Yellow Streak)

(家の端から端まで歩き回った (S = they = people)。)

- 93) I have often, while riding on the trains in Tokyo, seen children run **screaming up and down the aisles **.

 ——Jim Knudsen, 米人 (*American Insights*)
 (通路をきゃきゃと走りまわる (S = children)。)
- 94) I got a breath of fresh air by **walking up and down along the platform**.

—— Donald Keene, 米人 (Confessions of a Japanologist)

※この up and down along は二重前置詞とみなして

(プラットホームを行ったり来たりして (S = I)。)

95) I took out my pocket telescope and could plainly see numbers of people **going up and down the sides** of the object, which appeared to be sloping.

—— Jonathan Swift, 英人 (Guliver's Travel)

(傾斜している側面を上り下りする (S = people)。)

- 96) As the English **settled up and down the east coast**, they met and sometimes fought the Dutch. ——Vanessa Hardy, 英人 (Separate and Equal) (東海岸にそって住みついた (S = the English)。)
- 97) Two small boys were making a much larger boy **run up and down the lakefront** as fast as he could go.

 ——Mallory Fromm, 英人 (*The Culture of Language*) (湖畔を走り回る (S = boys)。)
- 98) I felt shivers **running up and down my spine.** ——James Kirkup, 英人 (U.S.A) (寒気で背筋が上から下までぞくっぞくするように感じた (S = shivers)。)

11.4 (prep.) down and up (3)

[S (= 生物 (3)、生物以外 (0))+V+down and up+N (《勾配》空間の下上) (3)]

(米人 (0)、英人(3))

99) As there was a plenty of room in the house underground, Peter ordered that the three little Darlings should live there with the Lost Boys: so Wendy and John and Michael were each given

a hollow tree for **going down and up** again. And they soon learned to go **up and down** as easily as if they had done it all their lives.

——James Matthew Barrie, 英人 (Peter Pan and Wendy)

(S = Wendy, John, Michael「空間」)

※この down and up の語順は 私のコーパスでは唯一のもでです。成句 up and down が、ここでは前後逆の語順をなし going down and up に違和感を感じますが、実際には当然ありることです。そのため後に見える go up and down には正規の形に復帰した印象を受けます。樹木の空洞の部分を上下に移動することを意味しています。

- (prep.) down... up...の例が2つコーパスにあります。先で取り上げるべきでしたが反意語並列のため煩雑になりますので割愛し、分析とその数などはまとめの個所で総合して数字化します。
- 100) There were doors all round the hall, but they were all locked; and when Alice had been all the way **down one side and up the other **, trying the middle, wondering how she was ever to get out again. ——Lewis Carrol,英人 (Alice's Adventures in Wonderland) ※43)と同じ例文。ここでは down...up...に視点を置きました(入り口 [up と見ている]から入り) (広間の片側から反対側まで歩いた (S = Alice「下上空間」心理)。)
- 101) In they all came, one after another ... The fiddler played his fiddle, and the dance began. Away they went, twenty couples at once,** down the middle and up** again, round and round.

——Charles Dickens, 英人 (A Christmas Carol)

※ダンスホールのダンサー用の椅子を基点(up)として。それから中央部に出て行くのが down、 戻って来るのが up。

(S = twenty couples「下上空間」心理)

11.5 まとめ

カッコ内の数字はその数。

- a) (prep.) down+N (57)
 - (ア) V+down+N (《勾配》不明) (32)

S = 生物 (28)、生物以外 (4))(米人 (20)、英人 (11)、アイルランド人 (1))

V = walk (14), be (2), travel (2), hurry, shuffle, ran, wander, shove, send, file, go, send, live, reach, cry, stroll, wander (各 1)

N = street (16) (ただし walk down the street (11)), road (6), hallway, sidewalk, stones, passage, pipe, the nearest (packets), yard, path, corridor, hall (各 1)

(イ) V+ down+N (《勾配》下方向「空間」心理 (5)) (25)

S=生物 (17)、生物以外 (8)(米人 (13)、英人(9)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、カナダ人 (1)、不明 (1))

V = climb (4), walk (2), race, tear, had, put, float, do, fall, went, running, had been,

scratched、are、lead、stood、follow、hurried、went、grow、stopped (各 1)

N = cliff, the center of volcano, lane, side of the dike, ladder, the lane to the creek, the pictured plate, the steep track, the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, their throats, the river, this, a rabbit-hole under the hedges, a very deep well, his cheeks, one side, the middle of the pictured plate, the face, the list of priorities, back roads of history,37, the room, steps, the country, the dark future, their thighs (A > A)

[a)-(ア)・(イ) 計 57 例を総合して]

(P)では、《勾配》不明」が 32 例。V では walk が 14 例で最も多く、be、travel それぞれ 2 例、その他は 1 例ずつ。N は street 16 例、road 6 例、その他は 1 例ずつ (S=生物 (28)、生物以外 (4))。(4)では、「《勾配》下方向」が 25 例ある (N) ずれも 「空間」を示すもので、「心理」を表すと思われるものが 5 例ある)。V では明らかに下方移動を表すもの climb up (4)、fall (1)2 つだけである。N は cliff、the center of volcano、ladder、river など傾斜を表すものが多く、その他は文中のニューアンスで推察する (S=生物 (17)、生物以外 (8))。

[(ア)・(イ)を総合して]

S = 生物 (45)、生物以外 (12)で生物が 4 倍弱

米人 (33)、英人 (20)、アイルランド人 (1)、カナダ人 (1)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、不明 (1)。

b) (prep.) up (29)

(ア) V+up+N(《勾配》不明)(8)

S = 生物 (7)、生物以外 (1)

米人 (4)、英人 (1)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、不明 (2)

V = walk (5), started, moved, was sleeping

N = street(3)(ただし walk up the street が(2)]、road (2)、gangway、room、avenue (各 1)

(イ) up+N (《勾配》上方向「空間 (21)、含心理 (4)」(21)

S = 生物 (13)、生物以外 (0)

米人 (10)、英人 (7)、不明 (4)

V= climb (8)、walk (2)、nexus 関係 (2)、stretched、went、would be 省略、followed、started、put、ere done、coming (各 1)、climb (8)、「中 1 語は action noun」、be (2)、walk、stretch、go (各 1)

N = road (2)、slopes、Mt.Fuji、flights of stairs、river、tunnel、stairway、tree、Wisteria、pipe、wall、hillside (各 1)

[b)-(ア)・(イ) 計29例を総合して]

(P)では、「《勾配》不明」が 8 例。 V では walk 5 例その他 1 例ずつ。 N は street3 例、 road2 例 その他 1 例ずつ(S = 生物(7)、生物以外(1))。(d)では、《勾配》上方向「空間 21 例(含心理 4)である。 V では明らかに上方移動を表すのは climb up 8 例のみ。 N は slopes、Mt. Fuji、 stairs、flights of stairs、hillside など傾斜を表すものが多くその他は文中のニューアンスによる

ものである。ここでは road が 2 例あるが street は見当たらない (S = 生物 (15)、生物以外 (6))。 [(ア)・(イ)を総合して]

S = 生物 (22)、生物以外(7)

米人(14)、英人 (8)、ニュージーランド人 (1)、不明 (6)

[a)·b)を総合すると]

(prep.) down 57 例、(prep.) up 29 例は大体3:2の比率で、down のほうが多い。「《勾配》不明」down が 32 例、up が 8 例で計 40 例。「《勾配》down 下方向」が 25 例 (内心理 5 例)、「up 上方向」が 21 例 (心理 4 例)計 46 例で後者がやや多い。

《勾配不明》では:

- V は down/up は walk 14/5 で共通して最も多い。全体的に動きが be は勿論 travel、hurry、run、shove、send、start、move など上下移動が不明なものである。
- N は down/up は street が 16 例/3 例 計 19、road が 6 例/3 例 計 9 例で最も多い。Hallway、stones、passage、gangway など平面を表すものである。
- S は生物 (down (28)、up (7) 計 35)、生物以外 (down (4)、up (1) 計 (5))で生物が 7 倍多い。

《勾配上下》では:

- Vはdown/upはclimb 4/8計12で共通して最も多い。これは上下移動が明確な動詞なので当然である。walk 2/2計4で多い(ただしこの動詞は上記勾配不明で記したごとく上下移動不明であるがつづくOによって移動方向がわかる)。この上下の移動を表す動詞は意外にすくなく、その他としてはfallただ1語だけに過ぎない。
- N は down は cliff、the center of volcano、ladder、the lane to the creek。up は slope、Mt.Fuji、 flights of stairs など勾配が想定できるものが多い。なお down、up とも road が 2 語づつ計 4 語 見当たるのは移動を表す表現としては当然かもしれない。
- 心理の場合、下方向 5 例、上方向 1 例、計 6 例で案外少ないことがわかる。
- S は生物 (down (17)、up (13)計 30)、生物以外 (down (8)、up (0)計 8)で、生物が 4 倍弱である。
- c) (prep.) up and down (17)
 - (ア) up and down+N (勾配不明・平面【前後左右広がりのある所】) (9)
 - S = 生物 (6), 生物以外 (3)

V = trot、take、scatter、appearance (appear の変形)、go、be、row、kick (各 1)

N = country (3), room, world (4 - 2), shore, field (4 - 1)

(イ) up and down+N(勾配不明/線状・細長のもの) (8)

S = 生物 (7)、生物以外 (1)

V = walk, run (各 2), cast, scream, go, settle (各 1)

N = avenue, the whole length of it (= the road), aisles, platform, sides, lakefront, coast, spine (6 1)

d) (prep.) down and up (勾配「空間」の下上) (1)

(ア) S = 生物

V = go

N = tree

[c)·d)とc)c)(ア)·c)(イ)を総合して]

c)では、N = 平面(前後左右広がりのある所)が 17 例中 country (3) room、world (各 2)、shore、field (各 1)計 9 例あり、全体の約半数である。a)で 57 例中の yard、face、room、country、b) で 21 例中 room、wall (各 1)総計 6 例で 7%強しかない。a)・b)の N が殆ど線状・細長のものを表していているとは対照的であり、事情が異なる。V として walk、run が各 2 語ある。移動を表す代表的な動詞であり、a)・b)と共通性がある。c)c)(イ)では、「空間の方向性」を表わしたものである running up and down my spine を除いて、実際に上り下りを表わすのか、「心理的上下の方向性」を表わすのかは不明確である。statal V は be 1 例。他の 16 例は全て actional V。主語が生物(13)、無生物(3)で、やはり生物の場合が極めて多い。

d)では、1 例だが N が a hollow tree なので、空間下上の動きを表わしている。 V は go で actional verb。 主語は生物である。

※up and down の意味について英米辞典の説明

I POD (8) to and fro (along)/OALD (5) 1) In one direction and then in the opposite direction 2) moving backwards and forwards 3) sometimes good and sometimes bad./LDCE (3) a) higher and lower b) backwards and forwards/RHD (2) a. back and forth, backward and forward b. from top to bottom or head to toe とあり、いずれも線状・細長のところを上下に動くイメージを表わしている。然し次の辞典はさらに上下左右の平面での動きをの場合もありうることを示している。

COD (6-7) to and fro along/COD (8-9) 1. to and fro (along) 2. in every direction/COD (10) in various places throughout/Webster (3) 1. to and fro: backward and forward 2. Here and there esp. throughout an area/OED (1, 2) 2. Hither and thither; to and fro; backward and forward 3. Here and there; at various points: esp. in several or diverse places throughout a district, country, etc.

CIDE (sv. up (= along)) に、It's hard work climbing **up and down** a ladder (= moving to a higher and then a lower position, esp. repeatedly) when you're carrying bricks./He was running **up and down** the path. (= moving along the path in one direction and then in the opposite direction, esp. repeatedly) in a state of panic, shouting for help. と記されています。

これらの説明を見ていると、元々 up/down は上か下、前か後かいずれか一方向への動き、つまり線状の動きを意味しているのが、up and down は同時に上下双方向の動きを表わしその振幅が大きくなると CIDE の説く如くパニックの状態を表わすことになることにもなる。それが拡大して線状の道路などからはみ出て縦横広い平面上の 前後左右の動きをも表わすことにも発展した推移が理解できます。単独の up/down とは異質な性格を持つことを実証しています。

以上の事を数字化すると次のようになります(全体の数が 104 なので、数字はおおよそ%を表している)。

数	down	up	up and down	down and up	計
事情	(57)	(29)	(17)	(1)	(104)
(勾配)不明	32	8	9		49
空間	25	21 (climb (8))	8	1	47
(心理)	(5)	(4)	(0)	(0)	(8)
動詞 walk	16	7	2	0	25
climb	4	8	0	0	12
	fall (1)	stood (1)			
	walk down	walk up the			14
	the street	street (3)			
	(11)				
statal verb	be (2)	be (2),	1	0	8
	are (1)	was sleeping,			
		I would be (1)			
actional verb	54	25	16	1	96
名詞 平面	9	6	9	0	15
	yard,	wall	country (3),		
	plate, face,		room (2),		
	room,		world (2),		
	country		shore, field		
線状	48	23	7	1	89
S 生物	45	23	13	1	21
生物以外	12	6	4	0	84
米人	23	14	4	0	51
英人	20	8	11	1 (3)	40
NZ人	1	1	0	0	2
アイルラント・人	1	0	1	0	1
カナダ人	1	6	0	0	7
不明	1	0	2	0	3

※広義の平面としては下記のものなども入るかもしれないが除外した。

● downとupの数の比は57:29でdownの方が2倍多い。down についてH. C. Wyld (Universal English Dictionary, sv. down)に、go down the road &c. along, away from given point. (こちらを起点にして向こうへ行く)と書かれている。また、Penguin English Student's Dictionary (1991)は、(prep.) down について from a place considered more active or important to one considered less active or important、(prep.) up について、from a place considered less important to one

considered more important、と説いている。最初に紹介した Charlie was walking down the street.は、ホテルを起点つまり中心点(= up)と考え、その地点からの移動はすべて down とみなすことによるのかもしれない。一般的 に前置詞としては、up よりも down が多いのはこのような事情があるのではなかろうか。

- up and down と down and up の比は 17:1 で前者の方が圧倒的に多い。これはリズム以外に、 Joan McConnel の言う如く up は正(+)または上位、主、down は負(-)、下位、従 とみなされていることと関係がありそうである(日本語でも上下左右という)。
- 「勾配不明」は down (32)、up (8)で down の方が 4 倍多い。「空間」上下移動(心理を含む)は down (25)、up (20)である。
- 動詞としては walk がもっとも多く walk down (18)、 walk up (5)、 walk up and down (2) 計 (25) で、全体の4分の1を占めている (walk down the street (11)、 walk up the street (2) 計 (13) は walk と street の結びが多いことを示している)。また、上下移動を表す climb down (4)、 climb up (8) 計 (12)で全体の1割強である。上下 移動を表す動詞はその他 fall と stood の2 語しかない。上下移動と関連のある (prep.) up/down に付随する動詞がこのように少数なのは、上下の動きを表す動詞の絶対量が少ないことによるように思う。

《「心理」の上下を表わしていると思われる実例 down (5)、up (3) 計 (8)のみ。》

{ down }43)、48)「入り口から奥へ進む」、46)「歴史の裏側にたどりつく」、50)「家を離れて旅をする」{ up }62)「勾配のあるトンネルの中を上る」、60)「道路の向こうにある」「勾配不明]の中にこの部のものも含まれていると思われるが、文脈だけでは不明なことが、非常に多い。話者、筆者は心中では意識しながら発話、筆記しているはずであるが、聞き手、読み手には空間・心理の上下いずれを表わしているのかが不明なケースが非常に多い。

- アメリカ英語では up は北、down は南を表わすといわれているが、その文例が一つも見当たらない。これも言外で話者、筆者が意識しながら言葉として表されない現実を表している(引用の3分の2がアメリカ人のもの)。
- statal verb(状態動詞)が7例、actional verb(動作動詞)が96例で動作動詞がほとんどで圧倒的に多い。また、主語として生物(82)、生物以外(21)である。前者が4倍ほどである。(prep.) down/up は基本的には上下の動き、移動に関連ある前置詞であることを示すとともに、当然のこととして、生物が多くなることを例証しているように思える。
- Objective が平面(上下左右の広がりのある所)上を移動する場合、downは57例中5例(yard、plate、room、country)、upでは28例中1例(room)にすぎないのとは対照的にup and downでは17 例中 country、room、world、shore、field が9 例もあり半数を占めている。これはdown+O、up+Oとup and down+Oとの顕著な違いである。振幅の幅の大きさ、広がりがup/down単独の場合は小さいのに、up and down のときは大きくなるケースが多々あることを表している。

類義語 street と road の場合、down the street (11)、up the street (3) 計(14)、down the road (1)、up the road (4) 計 (5)で、street の数が 3 倍多い。これも一般的な現象を表しているので

はなかろうか。

● 英米人の数は up は英人 (8)、米人 (14)、down は英人 (20)、米人(33)、計英人 (28)、米人 (47)で米人のほうが多い。しかし up and down では、逆に英人(11)、米人 (4)で英人のほうがは るかに多い。 英人のほうが N として平面 (線上ではなく)を好む傾向がるのであろうか。

12 have mostly to do with

最近下記の英文に接しました。

"For Japan, the major political events of the 1930s <u>had mostly to do with</u> growing military influence at home and the outbreak of hostilities on the continent. (Mark Jewel, *An Amazing 100 Years: The 20th Century In Review*)"(日本にとって、1930 年代の主な政治上の出来事といえば、その大部分が自国で軍部の影響力が増大したことと、大陸で戦争が勃発したことに関連している。)

mostly(たいてい、ほとんど)は to do with を修飾する副詞ですが had と to do with の間に something などが省略されている構文です。このことについて英和辞典には下記のごとく説かれています。『グランドセンチュリ英和辞典)』(2000)は、have ... to do with A の意味を A との関係がある、かかわりをもつ。[語法] ① have と to do の間に something[anything; nothing; a great deal; much; little など] を挿入して「関係が少しある、何かある; 全然ない; 大いにある; ほとんどない」などの意味を表す。②《 have の目的語を省略して》 A と関係がある; A を取り扱う⇒ This book has to do with cowboy life. {この本はカウボイ生活を扱っている。} ジーニアス英和(3~4)』『ジーニアス英和大』は have to do with O について「《 have O1 to do with O2 の O1 の省略から》、O1 は something, anything, much, little などで関係の度合いを表す。」と説いています。

to do はもちろん something などを修飾する「形容詞的用法」ですが言外の代名詞を修飾するのは虚像をなでる感じがします。この have to do with は have got to do with(アメリカ英語に多い)以外に be to do with(未来性), ときには want to do with(願望)ということもあることについて下記のように Longman 系の辞典に載っています。

• Longman Dictionary of English Idioms (1979)

want nothing to do with = to with to have no connection with (a person or thing) (~との関係、関連性を持ちたい) I want nothing to do with him. (彼との関連を持ちたくない) want (nothing, something, little, etc.) to do with [~との関係は{ 望まない、多少望む、あまり望まない}] \Rightarrow have (nothing, something, little, etc.) to do with (~との関係は[ない、多少ある、ほとんどない])

その他英米の辞典を見ますと、

• Longman Dictionary of Contemporary English (3) (1995)

have / be to do with = to have a connection with something (何かと関係がある) be nothing to do with = used to say that someone should not ask about something (何かとの関連についてたずねるべきではない時に用いられる) be something to do with (= having some connection, but you are not sure what (何らかの関連性はあるが、どんものなのかさだかではない)

• Oxford Dictionary of Current Idiomatic English (Vol. 2) (1983)

have (got) / be (sth) to do with sb / sth(1) = be related to, or connected with, sb / sth; (~と関係性、接続性がある)

Paul Stapleton, What Globalization Really Means に下記のような一節があります。

"There is also a great increase in the speed, at which we can access this knowledge. In less than a second Intenet search engines such as Goole can generate links to millions of pages. What does this have to do with globalization?"(この知識にアクセスできるスピードも大幅に増加した。「グーグル」のようなインターネット検索エンジンは、何百万ものページへのリンクを生み出すのに 1 秒もかからない。これはグローバリゼーションとどう関係するのであろうか。)

この What ですがやはり do の目的語になっているのですが辞典類には something, nothing, littl などは出ているのですが what が目的語になることの記述がほとんどなく珍しい実例です。

「強制、論理的必然性」を表す have to の語源について、**寺沢芳雄『英語語源辞典』(研究社)** には次のように説かれています。

「have to doll~しなければならない』は 1579 年に初出。この用法を OE にさかのぼらせる説もあるが (have to の OE の相当語は一般的にには sculan)、18C に入って確立した。 I have to say something. のような言い方の母胎として I have something to say が一応考えられる。一方不定詞の意となる用法は古典ラテン語にもうかがえる(cf habeam curare I should have to take care)。 ただし本来 habere +不定詞はラテン語では未来の意を表した。」

13 fight with

~という句は、「①~を敵にして戦う、②~を味方にして戦う、③~を使って戦う」の3つの意味がありますが、コーパスにあるものを並べてみました。

がありますが、コーパスにあるものを並べてみました。 Tibet **fought** for supremacy over Central Asia with China and Muslin nations. -Gary Dendo,米人 (Ethnic Peoples Shaping the 21st Century) p. 63, 誠美堂 The Tibetans fought valiantly with their own armed forces, but finally lost to the overwhelming 2) military power of the People's Liberation Army. -*Ibid.*, p. 64 1)と 1)は前後の context によって判断すべきものですが、ときには紛らわしいこともありま。これを払 拭することを表した文が見当たりました。 After all, unlike the French, Americans, and Canadians, the Germans and the Japanese fought against the Britain, not with them. –Brian Moeran, 英人 (Britain Images of Japan) p. 38, 金星堂 with は歴史的には対立を表し against を意味していたのが、後ほど協調、協力を表すことにもなったと いわれていますので、学生にはかつて戦ったアメリカと日本の関係に似ているいると学生に教えていま す。 3)の例は、辞典には上述の fight with / against は説明がありますが、この with の(道具、手段)「使っ て」のことは案外触れていないようです。 The Cold War was fought with words, diplomacy and economics. Despite outbursts of local violence, the two superpowers avoided direct confrontation –Joan McConnell,米人 (Understanding the United States) p. 77,金星堂 fight が他動詞の場合 They were sailing north to fight Britain. —(Standard Jack and Betty 3) p. 89, 開隆堂 The Black Knight and Front-de-Boeuf fought furiously hand to hand, till the Black Knight -Walter Scott, 英人 (Ivanhoe) 山口書店 smote his foeman down. (取っ組み合いをした。格闘した。)

14 動詞 land の実例

land という語は基本的には下記『OED』、『英辞郎』、『新英和大辞典』のごとく名詞の「陸、土地、土壌、所有地、ランド部」などを意味するが、動詞に転化すると比喩的に多様な意味をもつる。 興味を引く語なので carding したものを並べてみた。

● 『OED』(2) (sb.V) figuratively と記述されているもの

figuratively To catch or 'get hold of' (a person); to secure or win (a sum of money; esp. in betting or horse-racing.)

literally, figuratively To arrive at a place, a stage in a progression; to end in something figuratively To fall, light (upon) Obsolete

figuratively To bring into a certain position or to a particular point in a course or process

• **[CULD]** (vti [=verb transitive and intransitive])

1 (vti) to come down or bring (an aircraft) down from the air upon the land or the sea:

The plane landed in the sea; They managed to land helicopter safely; She felt twenty feet, but landed without injury

- 2 (vti) to come or bring (something) from the sea or to the land: After being at sea for three months, they finally landed at Plymouth; He landed the big fish with some help.
- 3 (vti) (loosely: figurative) to/cause to) finish or to [be] put in the end (in a certain), usually the wrong, place or a certain, usually bad condition): They had a serious accident which landed them in hospital; When we tried to do it ourselves, we landed (ourselves) in more trouble ...
- 4 (vt) (informal) to succeed in obtaining: He landed the job/the prize.
- 5 (vt) to give (a blow): She landed him one (=she hit him) with the book she was holding.

● 『英辞郎』(1)にある動詞 land

- 1. 【名】陸、土地、土壌、所有地、ランド部
 - 【自動】上陸する、着陸する、着地する、地面に落ちる、(記事がページに)載る、 (ある状態に)陥る、手に入れる、入手する、獲得する、得る
 - 【他動】上陸させる、着陸させる、陸揚げする、捕らえる、(魚を)釣る、(仕事を)見つける、 獲得する、(打撃を)加える、(打撃を)食らわす、(打撃を)与える
 - ◆【直訳】魚を上陸させる◆【land の目的語 (頻度順) 】job; contract; account; position; fish/【用例・他動】It took me six months to land a new position.

● 研究社『新英和大辞典』(6) の説明

vi.

- **1.** 〈人が〉陸に上がる[降りる]、上陸する; 〈船が〉陸[岸]に着く、…に寄港する。
- 2.a 〈航空機·宇宙船が〉着陸[着水]する。

- b 降りる、下車する。
- 3. 到着する〈up〉 [at, in, on] land, (《英》up) at an inn [in Tokyo].
- 4. 飛び降りる; 地面に着く(落ちる)。
- **5.** (困った状態に)立ち至る、陥る〈up〉[in].

vt.

- 1.a 〈航空機・宇宙船を〉着陸させる.
 - **b** 〈乗物が〉(ある場所へ運んで)〈人を〉降ろす、下車(下船)させる。
- 2. 〈船客・船荷を〉上陸させる、陸揚げする。
- 3. a 〈人を〉[困った状態に]立ち至らせる、陥らせる[in]。b [p.p.形で](面倒なことで)〈人を〉悩ませる、困らせる[with]。
- 4.《口語》得る、物にする、獲得する、捕える。
- 5.【釣】〈魚を〉釣り上げる、(網や手鉤(てかぎ)にかけて)取り込む。
- 6. 《口語》〈打撃などを〉~に加える、与える。
- 7. 〈ボールなどを〉(ある特定の場所に)送る。

(私のコーパスの実例)

- 1. 陸地、地面 •壁、地面, 月面、畑、岩、地球
- 1) Astronomers had observed mysterious gas explosions on Mars, and a strange object, perhaps a meteor, had landed in New Jersey. ——Brian Powle, 米 (*Cross-Cultural Fantasia*) (陸地) (天文学者たちは不思議なガスが火星に爆発したのを観察したが、不思議な物体、たぶん隕石がニュージャージー州に落ちた。)
- 2) **Columbus** got past the island and landed **on the mainland of the new territories**...In 1770, the English explorer **James Cook** landed on the southern continent.
 - ——David Halberstam, 米 (*The Next Century*) (陸地) (<u>コロンブスが新領土の本土に上陸し</u>、1770 年にイギリスの探検家<u>ジエイムス・クックが</u>南大陸に着いた。)
- 3) The impact of the collision was so violent that my car smashed against the wall of the tunnel and flipped over. As the car spun through the air, I prayed that Mother and I would not die. Finally **the car** landed with a tremendous thud.
 - ――Joan McConnell, 米 (Communication Across Culture) (地面・壁) (衝突の衝動が凄まじく、私の車はトンネルの壁につき当たってひっくり返った。空中で一回転したとき母と私が無事なことを祈った。あげくの果てに、<u>車は</u>ドンという音を立てて止まった。)
- 4) When **two objects of different weights** <u>landed</u> at the same time, it disproved Aristotle's idea that the speed of a falling object depended on its weight.
 - -----Paul Stapleton, 英 (New Perspectives) (地面) (重さの違う <u>2 つの物体が</u>同時に<u>地上に落ちる</u>とき、落下する物体のスピードはその重

さによるというアリストテレスの考えが間違っているが立証された。) Then in July, 1979, it (=Skylab) fell from the sky. A few pieces of Skylab landed in Australia. -Special English Feature (Voice of America) (陸地)(その 1972年7月に宇宙実験衛星スカイラブがオーストラリアに落ちた。) **Eagle** went down and landed **on the moon**. It was on July 21, and it was about one hundred and nine hours after their start. —(Everyday English 2) (月面)(月宇宙船イーグルが月面に着陸した。それは7月21日に発射して約109時間後で あった。) 7) When air travel became the quickest way to barnstorm, politicians would land on a farmer's ——John Dennis, 米 (Style in Britain) **field** and make speeches here. (畑) (飛行機で行くのが遊説する最速の方法となったとき、政治家たちは飛行機で農園に降 りて演説をした。) Their car failed to take a corner near kaikokura and landed on rocks below...their car failed a gentle right-hand bend five minutes south of kaikokura and landed on the rocks about 30m below. —(The New Zealand Herald, Monday, March 18, 1996) (岩)(彼らの車はカイコクラの近くの角を曲がりきれず崖下30メートルほどの岩に落下した。) A great wave threw him into the air—and **he** landed **among three trees**. ——Norman Wymer, 英 (My Culture Shock) (地面)(彼は大波が彼を空に跳ね上げ彼は3本の木の間の地面に落ちた。) 10) What is a meteorite? It is a piece of stone or metal from outer space that lands on earth. ——Wayne I. Phillips, 米 (Cultural Corners: America and Japan) (地球)(隕石とはどんなものですか。地球に宇宙から飛んでくる石または金属です。) 11) What is described in The Book of Ezekiel in the Old Testament is really a report of the landing of aliens from outer space. ——Anthony Bloomfield, 英 (The Great Unknown) (陸地)(旧約聖書のエゼキエル書は、実は宇宙から地球にやって来た異星人の記録であ る。) 海 2. 12) The captain's voice suddenly announced that one engine had stopped and a second engine was faltering. He said it might be necessary to attempt a landing at sea. —Donald Keene, # (*Meeting with Japan*) (海)(機長の声が1つのエンジンが止まりもう1つのエンジンも具合が悪いと突然告げ、海面 に着水することになるかもしれないと云った。) 13) **Most of meteorites** are small and land in oceans or places where few people live. ─Wayne I. Phillips,
★ (Cultural Corners : America and Japan)

家、拘留所、皿、窓台、テーブル

(海) (場所) (隕石の多くは小さく、人がほとんど住んでいない海か場所に落水する。)

116

14)	In fact, a V-2 rocket landed a few houses away from ours.
	——Stephen Hawking, 英 (Black Holes and Baby Universes)
	(家)(実際、 <u>V-2 ロケットが数軒離れたところに落ちた</u> 。)
15)	The elusive daredevil accused of parachuting off New York City's tallest buildings finally
	landed on Friday —in police custody.
	——International Herald Tribune, March 28, 1999
	(拘留所) (ニューヨーク市の最高層ビルから落下傘で飛び降りて罪に問われ逃げ回る命知ら
	ずが、金曜日に飛び降りて警察に拘留された。)
16)	As he relaxed and slipped into a doze, the spoon went clattering to the floor, landing in the
	plate. ——Barbara Seuling, 米 (You Can't Sneeze Without Your Eyes Open)
	(皿) (彼がくつろいでうとうとしたとき、 <u>スプーンが</u> ガチャガチャ音を立てて床の <u>皿に落ちた</u> 。)
17)	A parakeet had escaped from its home somewhere, had flown out into the cold street and
	landed on my window sill, perhaps attracted by the light.
	——William Saroyan, 米 (<i>Little Children</i>)
	(窓台)(<u>一羽のインコウ鳥が</u> どこかの巣から逃げ出て、冷たい街路に飛び出し、おそらく明か
	りに惹かれて私の家の <u>窓台にとまった</u> 。)
18)	Both pieces of money shot upon the air and landed on the table.
	——Jane Homeshaw, 英 (Dangerous Earth)
	(テーブル)(貨幣が2枚がテーブルの上に落ちた。)
4.	人、頭、頭髪、膝、足、血管、膝
19)	He flew around in the spaceship for several days before it eventually landed him near the
	north gate of Jerusalem. ——Anthony Bloomfield, 英 (The Great Unknown)
	(彼)(彼は結局エルサレムの北門近くに下ろすまでの数日宇宙船で飛び回った。)
20)	You could see the blows and, hear the sound of them. —Jack Schaefer, * (Shane)
	(人:land は自動詞で $O(=$ 人)が省略されている。) (げんこつが振り下ろされるのを見、その
	音を聞くことができた。)
21)	If I had done that to anybody in an elevator back home, it would have landed me in a
	fist-fight for sure! ——Michael L. Sherard, 米 (Tacit Assumptions)
	(私)(もし帰宅のエレベータの中でそんなことをしていたら、きっと <u>素手の殴り合いになってい</u>
	<u>ただろ</u> う。)
22)	The service demanded of "PT-109" was anything but easy. Her "skipper" or commander,
	John F. Kennedy , drove her up and down the waters of the Solomon Islands, With her he sent
	Japanese boats trying to land their soldiers to the bottom of the sea.
	——Bruce Lee, 米 (John F. Kennedy)
	(兵士) (硝戒艇 109 号に課された任務はとてもやさしいものではなかった。 船長の海軍中佐ジ
	ョーン・エフ・ケネデーはソロモン諸島の海域に進出した。硝戒艇で日本の鰹艇を捕捉し、そ

	の兵士を海底に沈めよっとしていた。)
23)	The bird flew toward David and landed on my head, as though it was accustomed to people.
	——William Saroyan, 米 (<i>Little Children</i>)
	(頭) (<u>鳥が</u> デービッドのところに飛びそれから、人間慣れしているかのように、 <u>私の頭にとまっ</u>
	<u>た</u> 。)
24)	I tossed my first-baseman's mitt up in the air and tried to have it and on my head, but it fell
	in a mud puddle. ——Jerome D. Salinger, 米 (<i>The Laughing Man</i>)
	(頭)(私の一塁手ミットを放り上げ、頭に落とそうとしたか泥の水だまりに落下してしまった。)
25)	Boo Boo tossed the package down to him. It landed squarely on his lap . ————————————————————————————————————
	(膝)(ブーブーは包みを下にいる彼に投げた。包みはまともに彼の片膝に落ちた。)
26)	A few pale pink petals anded in our hair, and wove lacey patterns. Others fell softly upon the
	grass. ——Joan McConnel, 英 (Language and Culture in the 21 st Century)
	(頭髪) (薄いピンク色の花びら数枚が私たちの頭髪に降りてきてレース状の模様を織った。草
	の上に静かに降りてきたのもあった。)
27)	He'll and on his feet, make the best of his broken heart, and go on as before.
	——Carol Christian (<i>Great People of Our Time</i>)
	(足)(彼は難関を切り抜け、傷心にもくじけず、以前と同様つき進んでゆくであろう。)
28)	It is important to prevent blood clots from forming because clots can travel through the body,
	eventually landing in a blood vessel narrowed by plaque.
	——JoAnn Parochetti, 米 (Ecology and Business)
	(血管)(<u>血栓が</u> 体内移動が可能でプラークで狭くなった <u>血管に</u> 結局は <u>付着する</u> ことになるの
	で、血栓が凝血するのを防ぐことが重要である。)
5.	仕事
29)	Americans don't mind how often they change houses, so long as they land a good job.
	——Richard Musman, 英 (UK and USA)
	(アメリカ人はよい <u>仕事を得る</u> 限りどれだけ家を変えても構わないと思っている。)
30)	It seems, however, that it takes more than just brain and personality to land such a job.
	——Paul McLean,米 (<i>Japan – Insight</i>)
	(そのような <u>仕事を見つける</u> 。)
31)	Landing a job at a good company is often made easier when someone is a graduate from the
	"right "school. ——Ibid.
	(よい会社での <u>仕事を見つける</u> 。)

形容詞

15 different from/different than/different to/different from~

to~/different to~ from

School Grammar では一般に different from が主流で different than、different to は亜流的存在であるように思われます。しかし、今回改めて英米の語法書のいくつかを調べてみますと確かに different from を問題視することはないものの、他の 2 句についても英米の歴史的、趣向的、語法的、使用頻度の差異などはあるとしても different than や different to をとくに毛嫌いするものは見当たりません。

最近の辞典や語法書はこのことを取り上げてはいるものが多いようですが、それでもやはり different than とくに different to に違和感をもつ英学生が今も多いように思われます。

旺文社『レクシス英和辞典』はこの 3 句について英米のネイティブ 100 人に行ったアンケート の結果を記述しています。

- different from 米 98% 英 93%

different from は英米ともあまり相違はありませんが、different than、different to についてはかなり の頻度の差異があることを示しています。今回 popular な different from を除き different than と different to の実例を挙げます。

15.1 different than

● 米 (5)

[different than+'word']

- 1) If you are writing for, or speaking to, people from a <u>different</u> cultural background <u>than</u> your own, you have to know something about the mentality of the people you are communicating with and how your words will sound.

 ——William Currie, 米 (*Light Essays*) (文化的生育環境の異なる人に手紙を書くとか話す場合は、相手の心理を知り、あなたの言葉で相手がどのような気持ちを抱くかをある程度知っていなければならない。)
- 2) In our everyday lives, we seldom think about how our way of living is remarkably <u>different from</u> our ancestors. ...By examining the lives of our ancient ancestors, who lived in a completely <u>different</u> world <u>than</u> ours, without mobile phones, fashion shows, national borders, or seedless tangerines, we can better understand our present behavior. ——Paul Stapleton, 米 (New perspectives) (日常の生活で、生活様式が先祖とはどれほど異なるかについて考えることは滅多にない。携帯電

話、ファッションショウ、国境、種無しみかんがなく、私たちとはまったく異質の社会に生きた古代の 祖先の生活を調べることによって、私たちの現在の行動パタンがいっそうよく理解することができ る。)

著者はアメリカ人だが初めは different from を、次に different than を用いている。まず英米で通じるオーソドックスの、次にアメリカでポピュラーなものを使った心理がはたらいていて、両句を比較するうえに参考になる実例だと思います。

[different than+'clause']

- 3) I dealt with the Japanese military on quite a <u>different</u> basis <u>than</u> I had with prisoners.

 ——Donald Keene, 米 (*Confessions of a Japanologist*)

 (日本の軍人には囚人とはまったく異なる基準で対応した。)
- 4) The causes of death in pre-modern times were much <u>different than</u> they are now.

——Paul Stapleton, 米 (New perspectives)

(前近代・原始時代の死因は今とはかなり違っていた。)

- 5) They knew that some crops took different nutrients from the soil than others.
 - ——Early Times, 米 (*Environmentally Yours*)

※than = conjuction、others = other crops (took nutrients from the soil) の意 (作物によって、土壌から摂取する養分に相違があることを彼らは知っていた。)

● 英(2)

[different than+'word']

As a comparison, I give some Kanji written by myself and John Newman —neither of us writes Japanese much now, and these scripts are for broadcasting, so one would expect them to be very formal. As we are both Jude men, one might expect them to be similar. In spite of that, the scripts are more different than the Romaji of different Japanese.

一Trevor Leggett, 英 (Behind the Blue Eyes) (比較として、私とニューマンが書いた漢字をあげてみましょう。二人とも日本語を書くことはあまりありません。今挙げたこの書体は放送用に書いたもので、大変文語体的だと思わらえるでしょう。私たちは2人とも柔道をしているので書く書体も似ているように思われるかもしれませんが、書体は日本語をローマ字化したのとはかなり違います。)

7) Many Japanese are convinced that everything in Japan, including water and grass and snow, is quite different than in any other country. ——D. Crystal, 英 (*The Celts*) (水、草、雪をはじめ日本のすべてが他国とはまったく異なると思っている人が多い。)

15.2 different to

- 米(2)
- 8) In addition to titles, there are other things in American life that visitors accustomed to maids, drivers, or cooks may find quite <u>different to</u> life in their own countries.

――Alison Raymond Lanier, 米 (Visiting the U. S. A.) (アメリカで生活しているときに触れる女中、運転手、料理人になれた訪問者でも、称号のほかに、自国で見るのとはまったく違う異質なものがあることに気づく人が多い。)

 Another reason that few foreign products are sold here, is that Japanese have quite <u>different</u> tastes to Americans or Europeans.

----Brian Powle, 米 (*Opposite Opinion on New Topics*) (外国の産物がここではほとんど売れない。それは日本人はアメリカ人やヨーロッパ人とはまったく違った趣向をもっいるということが理由の一つである。)

● 英(4)

10) When I first came, most Chinese, Indian or Italian restaurants were so adjusted to Japanese tastes that the food tasted quite <u>different to</u> the equivalent restaurants in Britain.

——Adrian T. Pinnigton, 英 (*Here and There*) (始めて来たとき、中国、インド、イタリア料理店で、日本人の嗜好に合わせていているものが多く、食物の味がイギリスの同類の料理店とはまったく違っていた。)

- I myself was a person <u>different to</u> the person I am today. ...I came to see that these values...were in many cases rather <u>different from</u> the ways of thinking and feeling with which I had grown up.

 ——Adrian J.Pinnington, 英 (*Here and There*) (当時の私は今の私とは違う。今抱いているこの価値観は多くの場合、私の成育とともに身につけた思考や感覚とはかなり違っていることがわかってきた。)
- 12) Love, faith, and morality belong to a <u>different</u> category <u>to</u> physics.

 ——Stephen Hawking, 英 (*Black Holes and Baby Universe*)
 (愛、信条、道義性は物理学とは異なる範疇に属する。)
- 13) Although, of course, Japan is <u>different to</u> Europe in many ways, it did not present to the casual gaze the touch of the exotic that I had hoped for when I left England.

──T. Turney, 英 (*Japan: A Wonder of Difference*) (もちろん、日本はヨーロッパとは違う点が多々あるけれども、ちょっと見たところ、イギリスを離れるときに心に抱いていた異国情緒のただよう気分になることはなかった。)

15.3 different from ~ to ~

14) Well, custom is <u>different from</u> country <u>to</u> country. ——(Steps in English 2) (そうですね、習慣は国々によってちがいます。)

different from と to/from ~ to ~が blending (英和辞典に記載がない,新編英和活用大辞典や新クラウン英語熟語辞典にも見当たりません。)

15.4 difference ... from ~ to ~

15) This difference in the meaning of wealth and privilege from one country to another may cause

addditionable confusion. ——Alison Raymond Lanier, 米 (Visiting the USA)

(富と特権の意味が国によってこのように違うので混乱が大きくなる。)

difference ~ from と~ to/from ~ to ~ の blending (英和辞典に記載がなく、新編英和活用大辞典や新クラウン英語熟語辞典にも見当たりません。)

15.5 different to ~ from ~

16) Time is <u>different to me from</u> what it is <u>to you</u>. ——VOA, 米 (*Special English Feature*) (時間感覚は私とあなたとでは異なる。)

different to me ... to you は「私にとって、あなたにとって」を意味し、「私、あなたとは違う」ではない。このことを特記した辞典を私は見たことがありません。

以上私の実例を挙げましたが英米の語法専門書にある説を参考として紹介します。

(参考: 英米の語法辞典に見る解説)

• Fowler's Modern English Usage (1/2) (1926)/(1965)

That <u>different</u> can only be followed by <u>from</u> and not by <u>to</u> is a SUPERSITTION. <u>To</u> is 'found in writers of all ages' (OED), and the principle on which it is rejected (You do not say <u>differ to</u>; therefore you cannot say <u>different to</u>) involves a hasty and ill-defined generalization. Is it all derivatives, or derivative adjectives, or adjectives that were once participles, or actual participles, that must conform to the construction of their parent verbs?...

• R.W. Burchfield: The New Fowler's Modern English Usage (1) (1998)

The commonly expressed view that <u>different</u> should only be followed by <u>from</u> and never by <u>to</u> or <u>than</u> is not supportable in face of past and present evidence or of logic, though the distribution of the constructions is not straightforward.

(a) History.

The OED lists examples of each of the three constructions from the dates indicated: <u>different from 1590</u>, <u>different to 1526</u>, <u>different than 1644</u>. In the 20c.a marked preference for <u>different from has been shown in BrE</u>; in the same period <u>different than has flourished in AmE</u>. But so too has <u>different from</u>. In both countries, in all kinds of circumstance, <u>different to has been widely perceived as a credible alternative (cf. indifferent to, but not <u>indifferent from or than)</u>. (b) Logic.</u>

The principle upon which <u>different to</u> is questioned is based on the premises that we do not say <u>differ to</u>. By this argument, all words in the same morphological family should be construed with the same prepositions; e.g. we ought to say <u>according with</u> (instead of <u>according to</u>) because we say <u>accords with</u>. Contrast also <u>full of</u> with <u>filled with</u>; <u>proud of</u> with <u>pride in</u>.

• The BBI Combinatory Dictionary of English (1986)

Different from, than(AE), to(ME)

USAGE NOTE: some purists consider only different from to be correct. Note that when a

clause follows, <u>than</u> becomes a conjunction, but <u>from</u> and <u>to</u> remain prepositions,—<u>different</u> than we thought; <u>different from</u> / to what we thought.

• The New Penguin English Dictionary (2000)

USAGE NOTE different from/to/than

The combination preferred by traditionalists is <u>different from</u>, which keeps <u>different</u> in line with <u>differ</u> (How does this version <u>differ</u> (or How is this version <u>different</u>) from the previous one?). <u>Different to</u> has, however, been used for a very long time in British English, and most modern authorities on British English accept it as an alternative, at least in anything but very formal writing. <u>Different than</u> is in widespread use in American English and is cautiously accepted in British English when followed by a Clause: It's altogether <u>different than</u> I expected (strictly; <u>different from</u> what I expected). <u>Different than</u> is not usually acceptable in either British or American English when followed by a noun.

- Random House Webster's Unabridged Dictionary (CD-ROM) (1999)
 - —Usage. Although it is frequently claimed that <u>DIFFERENT</u> should be followed only by <u>FROM</u>, not by <u>THAN</u>, in actual usage both words occur and have for at least 300 years. <u>FROM</u> is more common today in introducing a phrase, but <u>THAN</u> is also used: *New York speech is different from* (or *than*) that of Chicago. <u>THAN</u> is used to introduce a clause: The stream followed a different course than the map showed. In sentences of this type, <u>FROM</u> is sometimes used instead of <u>THAN</u>; when it is, more words are necessary: <u>a different course from</u> the one the map showed. Regardless of the sentence construction, both <u>FROM</u> and <u>THAN</u> are standard after <u>DIFFERENT</u> in all varieties of spoken and written American English. In British English <u>TO</u> frequently follows <u>DIFFERENT</u>: The early illustrations are very <u>different to</u> the later ones. The use of <u>DIFFERENT</u> in the sense "unusual" is well established in all but the most formal American English: The décor in the new restaurant is really different.
- Bryan A. Garner 『A Dictionary of Modern American Usage』 (1998)

 Different than is often considered inferior to different from. The problem is that than should follow a comparative adjective (e.g., larger than, sooner than, etc,) and different is not comparative—though, to be sure, it is a word of contrast. Than implies a comparison, e.g., a matter of degree, but differences are ordinarily qualitative, not quantitative, and the adjective different is not strictly comparative. Thus, writers should generally prefer different from—e.g.: "He performed to everything from jazz: "He performed to everything from jazz to the bossa nova to Brahms and Scarlatti, establishing a style very different from that of Bill (Bojangles) Robinson, Fred Astaire and the Nicholas Brothers."" Paul Draper,"Dayton Daily News, 21 Sep. 1996, at 3B.

Still, it is indisputable that <u>different than</u> is sometimes idiomatic, and even useful, since <u>different from</u> often cannot be substituted for it—e.g.: "This designer's fashions are typically

quite different for me than for women."

...Also, <u>different than</u> may sometimes usefully begin clauses if attempting to use <u>different from</u> would be so awkward as to require another construction—e.g.:"Life for Swann, who held out to sign a two-year, \$7 million contract in August, is a lot <u>different than</u> it was for him in Lynn."... Where, however, <u>from</u> nicely fills the slot of <u>than</u>, it is to be preferred—e.g. "Not that they'll be <u>any different than</u> [read <u>different from</u>] any of the others hoping to go in the two-round draft, but they are coming from a team in a three-year slump."

• Jim W. Corder [Handbook of Currant English (5)] (1978)

<u>Different from</u>. This is the general idiom, but <u>different than</u> can be used to avoid an awkward sentence:

Life in a small town is <u>different from</u> life in large city.

Living on a farm means a <u>different</u> life-style <u>than</u> living in a city does.

or: Living on a farm means a life-style different from the life-style in a city.

下記の辞典は、この句についてこれまで論議されてきたものが総合的に記述されていて、参考になります。

■ 『Webster's Dictionary of English Usage』 (1989)

The history of the controversy about <u>different than</u> and <u>different to</u> has two strands. The first is the history of the usage itself. The evidence shows <u>to</u> and <u>unto</u> as in the first prepositions used. as early as the 1520s. from is first attested in Shakespeare:

This week he hath been heavy, sour, sad,

And much <u>different from</u> the man he was ——(*The Comedy of Errors*, 1593)

The OED cites a 1603 comedy coauthored by Thomas Dekker for the use <u>different to</u> and a 1644 work by Sir Kenelm Digby for <u>different than</u>. From the 18th century the OED lists Addison with <u>different from</u>, Fielding with <u>different to</u>, and Goldsmith with <u>different than</u>.

The OED entry notes that <u>different from</u> was then (1897) usual, and that <u>different to</u> was well-attested and common in speech, but disapproved by some as incorrect. No mention is made of disapproval of <u>different than</u>, but a long list of standard British authors who had used it is appended. The OED pines (as does the grammarian H Poutsma) that <u>different than</u> is patterned after <u>other than</u>. Jespersen 1909—49 (vol7), on the other hand, observes that <u>different</u> is often felt to be a kind of comparative. He mentions as confirming evidence not only the construction with <u>than</u> also the tendency for different to be modified by such adverbs as much, not much, no, and any, which are frequently used with comparatives. He gives as his earliest instance the "<u>much different</u>" of Shakespeare's cited above. Here are some examples from our files of <u>different</u> with such adverbs….

The Libyan horse was far different in formation than any of the wild horses.

——Frank G. Menke (*The New Encyclopedia of Sports*, 1947)

I'm no different than you.

——Frank Shorter, (quoted in *Springfield* (Mass.) *Daily News*, 3 June 1986) And the construction after <u>different</u> in this example also has the feeling of a comparative:

...which is <u>different than</u> any other piece we've done lately ——(*Harper's March*, 1949) The OED list of standard authors using <u>different than</u> had been compiled by Fitzedward Hall in his *Modern English* of 1872. And if a topic like <u>different than</u> was in one of Hall's books, you can be pretty sure that there was some controversy about it. The original objection to <u>different than</u> appears in Baker 1770. He found this sentence in William Melmoth's translation of Cicero's letters, published in 1753:

I found your Affairs had been managed in a different Manner than what I had advised.

Commented Baker: "A <u>different Manner than</u> is not English. We say <u>different to</u> and <u>different from</u>; to the last which Expressions I have in another Place given the Preference, as seeming to make the best Sense. "We are not sure just how Baker's opinion was carried down to the 19th century so that Hall could pick it up. Leonard. 1929 found it mentioned in no other 18th-century grammarian and Goold Brown's mid-19th-century <u>Grammar of English Grammars</u> does not seem to mention it (at least it is not in the index of the 1880 edition), although he does object to <u>different to</u> and specify <u>different from</u> as correct. Hall's discussion, according to which Hodgson 1889, was chiefly concerned with <u>different to</u>, which had been the subject of continuing discussion from Baker's time; mention of <u>different than</u> may have been only incidental.

At any rate, Hodgson 1889 and Raub 1897 object to different than, and it has become a favorite topic of 20th-centurh comment. In the first half of the century <u>different than</u> was regularly condemned. In the second half some still condemn it, but majority find it acceptable to introduce a clause, because insisting on <u>from</u> in such instances often produces clumsy or wordy formulations. But there is still quite a bit of residual hostility to <u>than</u> especially when it is followed by a noun or pronoun. This may have more to do with the question of whether <u>than</u> can be a preposition than with <u>different</u> itself.

<u>Different to</u> has been the subject of more nearly continuous dispute. The problem began with Baker 1770. Baker preferred <u>from</u> to <u>to</u> and he raised the often repeated point that the verb <u>differ</u> takes <u>from</u> and not <u>to</u>. The argument from the verb was repeated by Lewis Carroll in an 1886 letter, by Compton 1898, Viretelly 1906, and many others. Fowler dismissed it as mere pedantry; notwithstanding his scorn, the argument can be found as recently as Strunk & White 1979 and Phythian 1979, Baker's objection turns up in Murray 1795, where <u>different to</u> is corrected to <u>different from</u> in two places. It probably went from Murray into other grammar books. It props up in Alford 1866, where Alford presents the problem as sent him by a correspondent who introduces a new argument, based on the meaning of the prefix dis- in Latin:

"apart," This argument is repeated as recently as Cook 1985.

Fowler 1926 stoutly defends <u>different to</u>, and his defense has probably done much to lessen British objection to the expression, although objection still lingers in many letters to The Times, as Howard 1980 reports.

In summary we can say that there need have been no problem here at all, since all three expressions have been in standard use since the 16th and 17th centuries and all three continue to be in standard use. Mencken 1963 (abridged) comments on a flurry in the newspapers over <u>different than</u> that took place in 1922, Mencken cites with approval this comment from the New York Sun:

The excellent tribe of grammarians, the precisians and all others who strive to be correct and correctors, have as much power to prohibit a single word or phrase as a gray squirrel had to put out Orion with a flicker of its tail.

16 ①... of ~ kind(s)/sort(s), etc と②~ kind(s)/sort(s) of ..., etc の形態比較(kind/sort, etc が種類、種族を表す場合)

①of \sim kind(s)、… of \sim sort(s) にしろ、② \sim kind(s) of …、 \sim sort(s) of …にしろ、 \sim の箇所は一定の限定語句が置かれることが多いことを常日頃認識してきましたがその実態はどのようになっいるのかに関心がありを調べてみました。①と②型の kind(s) /sort(s)を修飾する部分の形容詞句を \sim で表します。

研究社の新英和大辞典(第6版)に、this kind of beer = beer of this kind、this kind of book = a book of this kind この種の[こういう]本、Books of this kind are \cdots =《口語》These kind of books are …とあり両者とも同じ意味であるとしています。

しかし双方は形態的には勿論、意味的にも相違のあるケースがあります。歴史的には①型のほうが古く、文語体で、アメリカ英語では避けられる傾向があり、kind(s)や sort(s), etc を強調するとする学者もいます。

無冠詞のWhat kind of doctor is he?は「かれは何が専門の医者ですか」、不定冠詞のある場合は口語体で「特徴や能力」をいい、What kind of a doctor is he?は「彼はどんな(どの程度の)医者ですか」を意味しアメリカで多く使われている。また a kind of a doctor は「ある程度の医師」「医師みたいな人」を、a doctor of a kind は「名ばかりの医師、(軽蔑的」に藪医者)」とか「医療技術がほかの医師と同程度の人」を表わすとする説もあります。

(A) This kind of flower is rare to see. (B) Flowers of this kind are rare to see. (C) These kind of flowers are rare to see. 比較すると、(A) が最も普通で(B)はやや文語的表現、(C)は kind of が形容詞化された口語的表現で書き言葉では用いない。 These kind of flowers は花の数は多いが種類は一つで these kinds of flowers は花の種類は二つ以上の場合であると言とする説もあります。

イギリスの話し言葉では Men of that sort/Those sort of men/That sort of men are highly prized. (「あのような類の人々は高く評価されている」はいずれも使われるが、アメリカでは2つ目の文は使用を避ける傾向がある)(George O. Curme, *Syntax*, 1931)

This kind of chocolates may refer to the maker or brand whereas chocolates of this kind refers to some characteristic of quality of them. The same observations apply to *sort*. (this kind of chocolates は(「このチョコレートのメイカーまたは商標」を、chocolates of this kind.は「このチョコレートの品質や特徴」を表す)とする説もあります。(Frederick T. Wood, *Current* English Usage, 1987) That's a funny sort of car. (「それは変な車だ」のように無冠詞は形式ばらない文体である)と Michael Swan, *Practical English Usage* (2005)は説いています。

その他さまざまな説があり難解な分野の一つといえます。

- ~の語(カッコ内は実数)
 - (①では of の前、②では of の後の名詞・名詞句})

① ... of ~ kind 型 (123)

[...of ~kind (69)]

• of this kind (12)

a book; programmes; advertisement; conversations; social intercourse; families, information; problems; butterflies; systems; effects; tom-foolery (ばかげたこと)

• of any kind (11)

a drink; war; legacy; comment; lawlessness; influences; difficulties; guns; valuations; no other people; language

• of all kinds (9)

lessons; trees; freedom of expression; dung; traffic; boats; medicine; activity; minerals, cereals, beef cattle, fruit plantations; people were of all kinds

• of the kind (8)

communication; slogan; co-operation; effects; jackets or neckties; a welfare state; complements; the *kana* and *kanji* were

• of some kind (6)

activity; a message; a census; a test; a clue; fad

• of the same kind (3)

true story; dreams; the Nagea lines are

• of various kinds (3)

propaganda; activities; manner or insensitivities

• of **its** kind (2)

the first book; project

• of \mathbf{a} kind (2)

documents; activities

• of **one** kind **or another** (2)

lectures and meetings; disappointment and ill will

• of a certain kind (2)

a person; men

• of a different kind/~different kinds (2)

a fault; objects

● その他(7)

neglect of that kind; liberalism of the American kind; industries of a cruder, materialistic kind; criticism of a much more personal kind; closed shop of the worst kind; questions of the most personal kind; those of the simplest kind

[... of \sim sort (41)]

• of **the** sort (10)

advocate; words; anything; accident; nothing; anything; something(4)

• of **this** sort (9)

a crisis; mediocre; descriptions; encounters; experiences; jumps; offenders; changes; problems

 \bullet of **all** sorts (5)

crime; buying and selling; patients; medical supplies; foreigners

• of **some** sort (3)

vested interests; a farm hand or worker; a plane crash, a railroad wreck, a flood, a scandal, a fight

• of any sort (2)

praise; friends

• of **a** sort (2)

pubs; living things

• of **sorts** (2)

battle fatigue; a compromise

● その他 (8)

a gourmet or anything of that sort; artificial weapons of one sort or another; an affair of quite another sort; photographs of a most unlikely sort; Japan is of the latter sort; a scoundrel of the worst sort; student violence of the most extreme sort; education of the informal sort

[... of ~ type (7)]

• of **this** type (4)

comparisons; data; example; words

● その他 (3)

leaders of all types; groups of the type; religions of the same type

[... of ~ description (3)]

businessmen of **this** description; words of **any** description; plays of **every** description (各 1)

[... of ~ species (2)]

the fish of **that** species; a philanthpropist (慈善家) of **a new** species (各 1)

[... of all varieties (1)]

the coffee of all varieties

② ~ kind / type of …型 (190)

[~ kind of ... (83)]

• **the** kind of...etc. (24)

thing (2); life (2); work (2); education (1); house (1); meiji-period household (1); instruction (1); information (1); life (1); average lives (1); man (1); patriotism (1); person (1); places (1); restlessness (1); ring (1); rocks (1); school (1); scholarship (1); totalitarianism (1); writing (1)

● the+その他 kind of (10)

the best kind of husband (1); the best kind of life (1); the same kind of fruits and vegetables (1); all the many kinds of combs (1); the different kinds of conversation (1); the different kinds of fruits and vegetables(1); the usual kind of college paper (1); ethnical kind of thinking(1); the elaborate kind of wedding (1); the militaristic kind of teaching (1)

• **this** kind of ... (13)

thing (2); coincidence (1); verbal debate (1); made-in-Japan English (1); joke (1); lane (1); humour (1); talk (1); thinking (1); thing (1); trouble (1); life (1)

• **that** kind of ... (5)

coverage (1); doctor (1); flattery (1); person(1); a bird (1)

• different kind of ... (5)

sausage (1); sales (1); soup(1); social service(1); person (1)

• a kind of ... (4)

catechism (1); inferiority complex (1); mocking laugh (1); tax (1)

• many kinds of (3)

time (1); weather (1); plants(1)

• what kind of (3)

a hand (1); a fellow (1); Chinese art (1)

• all kinds of (2)

food (1); places (1)

• another kind of (2)

udon (1); chess (1)

certain kinds of (2)

business (1); knowledge (1)

● その他 (10)

a number of kinds of insects (1); some new kind of footgear (1); its own kind of (1); no kind of a watch (1); several kinds of Viking ships (1); particular kind of humour (1); both kinds of telephone books (1); three desirable kinds of friends (1); a battling kind of person (1); such a ridiculous kind of a horse-fowl (1)

• kind of (14)

これは上例の範疇とは違い、口語体として「ほとんど、大体、やや、どちらかと言えば、いわば」を意味し自分の発言に自信のないときなどに使い、原則として副詞的に形容詞・動詞の前に用いるといわれていますがます。わたしのコーパスでは形容詞を修飾する例が一番多く、動詞、名詞、前置詞(like)、接続詞(like)にかかる実例が見当たりました。

- ➤ kind of 動詞 (3)
- 1) We don't get exited about it. We kind of expect it.

——J. R. Brown et al (Our World Now)

	(それを見て胸が弾むことはありません。ただそういう心	・境になればと思いますが。)
2)	Oh, I just kind of put him out of the way.	——J.Schaefer (Shane)
	(ああ、ちょっとびっくりさせてやっただけだ。)	
3)	I'd kind of like to find something more original than that	at, something that's hard to find in Japar
	——I	D. Keene (A Passport to Good English)
	(それよりも独創的で、どちらかといえばちょっと日本	では見かけることのない代物が好きて
	す。)	
	▶ kind of 形容詞 (6)	
4)	kind of cold outside.	——W. Saroyan (Inhale and Exhale)
	(外はちょっと寒いよ。)	
5)	London at first sight looks kind of modern, and then you	u find out just how old it is.
		——R. Musman (UK and USA)
	(ロンドンは初めはちょっと近代的な都市に見えますか	、しばらくたってまさに古風な都市だと
	いうことに気がつきます。)	
6)	"Well, yes, it is kind of singular; of course there's a g	reat deal in being educated, you know.'
	"Well, yes, it is kind of singular; I've often thought so n	nyself."
		——R. Musman (UK and USA)
	(「ちょっと不思議だよ。本当に名立ての教養人である	るのに。」「うんそうだよ、少し変だなあ。
	自分もこれまでそのように思ったことがよくあったよ。」)	
7)	Some people who can afford a car feel kind of ashar	med if they're seen in a bus or on the
	Subway.	——Musman (UK and USA)
8)	Somehow it seems kind of crass to me.	——M. L. Sherard (<i>Tacit Assumptions</i>)
	(いくぶん繊細さに欠くように私には思えるのですが。)	
9)	It's kind of funny looking.	P. B. High (American Life, Miscellanea)
	(ちょっと奇妙な顔つきである。)	
	▶ kind of 名詞 (1)	
10)	"I din't need to get it, but it's kind of a symbol," said	Mrs. Yamada.
	——(Inter	national Herald Tribune, June 4, 1999)
	(「手に入れる必要はなかった。ある程度象徴といって	てもよいのもだから」と山田夫人が言っ
	た。)	
	> kind of 前置詞 (2)	
11)	It's kind of like a credit card.	——出典不詳
	(それはちょっとクレジットカードのようなものです。)	
12)	Why, a trick horse is kind of like an actor.	——J. Steinbeck (The Gift)
	(芸当のできる馬は役者のようなものだ。)	
	like はここでは前置詞とみられますが形容詞とみる場合	合もあります。「~のような、~に似た。~

らしく、~同様に。~にふさわしい、~の特徴を表わしている。(たとえば)~のような。」などを 意味します。

- ▶ kind of 接続詞 (1)
- 13) It was kind of like he was back in high school. He was acting like a high school kid.

——B. Greene (*Cheesegurgers*)

(彼はまるで高校時代に戻ったかのようであった。高校生のように振舞っていたので) ※接続詞としての like は as if を意味しアメリカ英語で多用されると云われています。

③ ~ sort of ...型 (54)

[a/an (-) sort of ... (18)]

a sort of mixture (1); a sort of "strange" land (1); a sort of way (1); a sort of "I'm from Missouri!" attitude (1); a sort of fancy-dress dance (1); a strange, foreign accented sort of Japanese (1); a strange sort of madness (1); an extreme sort of imagery (1); an unusual sort of case (1); a queer sort of fellow (1); a little, low-legged, ginger-haired, scowling sort of madness (1); a difficult sort of man (1); a lonely, unhappy sort of man (1); a good sort of fellow (1); a boring sort of thing (1); a very somber, magnificent, man's sort of room (1); a very difficult sort of city (1);

a sort of a store on the side (1) (副業としの名ばかりの店)

※このように sort of a のごとく of の後に不定冠詞 a が続くのは口語体といわれています。

[the sort/the same sort of \dots (18)]

- the sort of (16)
 - man (2); woman (2); thing (2); picture jobs place description (1); person(s) (3); phrase reaction word people
- the same sort of ... (2) thing (2)

[what sort of ... (6)]

a man (3); a person (2); friend (1)

the sort of man/woman と同様 a man と a person は口語体といわれています

[this sort of ... (5)]

thing (2); thing (1); courage (1); people (1)

[that sort of ... (3)]

thing (1); fancy spear (架空の変わった形) (1); well (階段吹抜き) (1)

[any sort of ... (2)]

meaningless pattern (1); menace (1)

[その他(2)]

all sorts of thing (1); every sort of attack (1)

※sort of は kind of と同じ機能があるといわれていますが、私のコーパスには一例も見当たりません。一般的に実例は kind よりも少ないのではないかと思います。

④ ~ type of ... 型 (39)

[a (--) type of (9)]

relationship (1), cooking (1), Chinese (1), stores (1), a new type of medicine (1), a traditional type of Japanese boss (1), a more traditional type of establishment (1), a special type of person (2)

[the type of (7)]

female (1), experiment (1), store (1), the same type of calls (1), the desired type of tissue (1), the dangerous new type of "hippies" (1), the big spender type of person (1)

[this type of (6)]

Behavior (1), advertisement (1), hero (1), student (1), questioning (1), hopeless situation (1)

[many types of (3)]

cheese (1), stores (1), nuclear missiles (1)

[different type of (2)]

screen (1), stores (1)

[special type of (2)]

Person (2)

[その他+type of (10)]

certain types of credit cards (1), particular type of family (1), new types of work (1), any types of beliefs (1), all types of especially sustained aerobic exercise (1), every type of human being (1), its own type of music (1), these types of beliefs (1), another human-relations type of restraint (1), two types of lawyers (1)

⑤ ~ species of (6)

a species of (1), a different species of animals (1), other species of apes and monkey (1), many species of animals (1), the related species of dolphins and porpoises (1)

①の範疇別数とパーセント

総数 123

• of \sim kind (69)(56.09%)

this (12), any (11), all (9), the (8), some (6), the same (3), various (3), its (2), a (2), one or another (2), certain (2), different (2), that (1), the American (1), a cruder, materialistic (1), a much more personal (1), the worst (1), the most personal (1), the simplest (1)

• of \sim sort (41)(33.33%)

the (10), this (9), all (5), some (3), any (2), a (2), sorts (2), that(1), one sort or another (1), quite another (1), a most unlikely (1), the latter (1), the worst (1), the most extreme (1), the informal (1)

• of \sim type (7)(5.69%)

this (4), all (1), the (1), same (1)

- **●** of ~ description (3)(2.44%)
 - this (1), any (1), every (1)
- of ~ species (2)(1.63%)
 - that (1), a new (1), these (1)
- of ~ varieties (1)(0.82%) all (1)

②の範疇別数とパーセント

総数 180

- ~ kind(s) of ... (87)(48.34%)
 - * the/(+その他) kind of etc. (34)
 the (24)、the best (2)、the different (2)、the usual (1)、the same (1)、all the many (1)、the ethnical (1)、the elaborate (1)、the militaristic (1)
 - > その他 (39)
 this (13)、that (5)、different (5)、a (4)、many (3)、what (3)、all (2)、another (2)、certain(2)、a number of (1)、some (1)、its (1)、no (1)、several (1)、particular (1)、both (1)、three (1)、a battling (1)、such a ridiculous (1)
 - ➤ kind of (14)
- ~ sort(s) of ... (54)(30.00%) a/an (18), the (18), what (6), this (6), this (5), that (3), any (2), all (1), every (1)
- ~ type(s) of ... (39)(21.66%) a(-) (9), the (7), this (3), different (2), special (2), certain (1), particular (1), new (1), any(1) all (1), every (1), its own (1), these (1), another (1), two (1)
- ~ species of ... (6) a (1), a different (1), any (1), other (1), many (1), the related (1)

私のコーパスには、~ description、varieties of ... が一例も見ありません。①でもこれらの語は 非常にまれなのですが②の型では実例はほとんどないことを示していると思います。

①②を見てみると~の部分が機能語として、冠詞・形容詞・代名詞および名詞の所有格その他ほとんどが言語学でいう determiner(決定詞)といわれているものがほとんどです。やはり限られた語句が置かれるケースがほとんどあることを示しています。determinerには、次の5種があります。

- 不定冠詞:定冠詞 a、an、the
- 形容詞用法の指示代名詞:this、these、that、those、such、the same など
- 数量を表す形容詞: many、much、few、little、every、all、some、any、either、every、each、no、none など
- 形容詞用法の所有代名詞:my、your、his、her、our など
- 序数詞: one、two、first、second、last、next など

多いことを示していま などの前に疑問代名		at kind of doctor is

17 Adjective Phrase (形容詞句) としての in the past (期間)

「in the past+期間」は一般に adverb phrase (副詞句)として動詞を修飾するのですが、下記の VOA(=The Voice of America:アメリカ情報局の行う海外向けラジオ放送)のように前方の名詞を修飾するのは珍しい例です。

- 1) Damage from the increased use of **CFCs in the past decade** still has not been felt. (過去 20 年間のフロンガス使用によって増えた被害はまだ実感されてはいない)
- Any discussion of improvements in technology in the past five years also must include the Hubble Space Telescope.

(過去5年の間になされた科学技術改善の論議もハーブル宇宙望遠鏡に盛り込まれているはずである。)

前置詞

18 名詞+前置詞+名詞(名詞は同一語)

18.1 N+after+N (38)

[N(=時間)(18)]

time after time (2), day after day (8), day after day after day (1), night after night (2), week after week (1), minute after minute (1), hour after hour (2), generation after generation (1)

[N(=具象)(4)]

armful after armful (1), boat after boat (1), bus after bus (1), bottle after bottle (1)

[N(=抽象)(16)]

addition after addition (1), battle after battle (1), community after community (1), dance after dance (1), dance after dance (1), league after league (1), miracle after miracle (1), mountain after mountain (1), question after question (1), row after row (1), sentence after sentence (1), street after street (1), strike after strike (2), wave after wave (1)

時間を表す N が半数を占めていてこの句の特徴を表している。 特に day after day が目立つ。 day after day が 1 例あり興味深い。 対照句の night after night が 2 例で day after day の 4 分の1である。

18.2 N+by+N (24)

side by side (5), one by one (4), bit by bit (2), brick by brick (1), copper by copper (1), day by day (1), feature by feature (1), leaf by leaf (1), little by little (1), nation by nation (1), piece by piece (1), quarter inch by quarter inch (1), rouble by rouble (1), step by step (1), year by year (1), woman by woman(1)

side by side、one by one が 5、4 例で最も多い。この句の代表格といえよう。

18.3 N+following+N (1)

petal following petal (1)

18.4 N+in+N (23)

all in all (10)、hand in hand (5)、hand-hand (4)、arm in arm (3)、arm-in-arm (1) この句では all in all が半数ほどある。その他はすべて hand と arm だけであるのは顕著な特色である。いずれも身体の一部であるがこれとは対照的に all が人体を意味する例が一つも見当たらない。 LDCE (4) CD-ROM には **all in all** が used to show that you are considering every part of a situation を意味するとして All in all, it had been one of the most miserable days of Henry's life.が例示されて

いる。また、Random House Webster's Unabridged Dictionary CD-DOM は **a.** everything considered; in general: *All in all, her health is greatly improved.* **b.** altogether: *There were twelve absentees all in all*.とある。(研究社『新英和辞典』(7)には(1)[文頭に用いて]大体において、概して(いえば)(2) 全部で、合計を意味するとある。私の 10 例中文頭以外のものはつぎの 1 例だけである。これも興味を喚起する現象である。)

1) Taking it **all in all** I am bound to conclude that the professor at her college would not have given me very high marks. ——W. S. Maugham, 英 (*Summing Up*) この all in all は「要するに」を意味する。

18.5 N+on+N (6)

one-on-on (4), row on row (2)

18.6 N+upon+N (9)

gust upon gust (1), rows upon rows (1), wave upon wave (1), hundreds upon hundreds (2), thousands upon thousands(4)

on と upon は類似語ではるが on の場合は hundreds や thousands が前後にくることはないのであろうか。 あってもきわめてまれなのか知れない。

18.7 N+over+N (1)

hand over hand (1)

18.8 N+to+N (18)

[人間または人体の一部を表すもの (15)]

male-to-male (1), person-to-person (1), face-to-face (2), face-to-face (2), head to head (2), heart-to-heart (1), man-to-man (2), eye to eye (1), one-to-one (2), one to one (1)

[その他(3)]

ground-to-ground (1), moment to moment (1), day to day (1)

この句は人間に関係のある場合が極めて多く顕著な特質といえることがわかる。

総合するとこの句の前置詞は全部で 8 語で、after (38)が最も多く、by (24)、in (23)、to (18)、upon (9)、on (6)、following (1)、over (1)であり、after、by、in (23)、to (6)と他の語とは数的にかなり差がありまた登場しない前置詞が多い。なぜであろうか。

19 during/in/for/over ... the past/last ... years, etc.

19.1 during (17)

	19.1 during (17)		
[du	ring the past ~ (13)]		
•	during the past year(s), etc. (in perfect tense) (5)		
1)	During the past year I have made six trips to Japan, staying there a month each time.		
	——Jack Seward, 米 (An American's America)		
2)	All the neighbors had tried at one time or another during the past nine years to tell Mrs. Wilkins		
	in the kindest possible way. ——E. Caldwell,米 (<i>The Light</i>)		
3)	Why has the situation changed so dramatically during the past twenty or so years?		
	——Donald Keene, 米 (Living in Two Countries)		
4)	There <u>has been</u> a steady escalation of <i>keigo</i> during the past hundred years. —— <i>Ibid</i> .		
5)	However, during the past 20 years, printing methods (teletypes) for sending messages have		
	become more widely used. ——John Dennis, 米 (Stories Behind English)		
•	during the past decade (in perfect tense) (1)		
6)	During the past decade Japan has become a major exporter of capital.		
	——John Willen, 米 (Essential English for Medical Students)		
•	during the past decade (in past tense) (1)		
7)	Cross-cultured research conducted by Stevenson and others during the past decade has only		
	begun to document the education gap. ——(Psychology Today, **, Today, 1983)		
	(Cross-cultured research which <u>was conducted</u> by Stevenson and others と考える)		
•	during the past centuries (in perfect tense) (1)		
8)	We human beings <u>have been</u> so proud of our scientific progress <u>during the past three centuries</u> .		
	——Peter Milward, 英 (A Country Diary in Tokyo)		
•	during the past few days (in perfect tense) (1)		
9)	He told me that during the past few days he had been able to read for the first time since his		
	arrival. ——A. E. Hotchner, 米 (The Last Days of Ernest Hemingway)		
•	during this past summer (in perfect tense) (1)		
10)	During this past summer my boy has worked as a laborer in a Canadian pull and paper mill.		
	——Franklin D. Roosevelt, 米 (A Letter to Dean Grenough of Harvard University)		
•	during the past years, etc. (in past tense) (3)		
11)	The scientists said that during the past fifteen years they found a link between the phase of the		
	moon and the temperature on earth. ——VOA, 米 (Science in Your Life)		
12)	We have the important factor of one million coloured Commonwealth immigrants who came to		
	settle in Britain during the past 30 years. ——Russell Barnes, 英 (What's New in Britain)		

13)	The scientists said that during the past fifteen years they found a link between the phase of the
	moon and the temperature on earth. ——VOA, 米 (Science of Your Life)
[du	ring the last ~ years (4)]
•	during the last years (in perfect tense) (3)
14)	I have felt during the last three or four years an increasing sense of alienation from Japanese
	life. ——James Kirkup, 米 (I Remember Japan)
15)	During the last hundred years, the novels of Charles Dickens have had a phenomenal sale.
	——Dale Carnegie, 米 (Five Minute Biographies)
16)	Perhaps the following example will illustrate how much these standards <u>have changed</u> <u>during</u>
	the last 40 years. ——Joan McConnel, $\#$ (Language and Culture in the 21 st Century)
•	during the last twenty years (in past tense) (1)
17)	A WHO study shows smoking <u>dropped</u> by one percent in the last industrialized countries
	during the last twenty years. ——VOA, ** (Special English Feature)
	19.2 in (17)
[in	the past years (12)]
•	in the past years (in perfect tense) (11)
18)	He's made ten films in the past five years. ——Ken Method, 英 (Life'Little Ironies)
19)	In the past years, new materials have been developed. ——(VOA, Science in Your Life)
20)	Scientists using catfish in experiment in Katsushika, have successfully predicted 37% of the
	earthquakes in the Tokyo area in the past eight years.
	——Brian Powle, 米 (Cross Cultural Fantasia)
21)	I cannot believe that the nature of the young has changed out of recognition in the past fifty
	years. ——Robert Lynd, 英 (Searchlights and Nightingales)
22)	The member of Americans who use "drugs" <u>has increased</u> greatly in the past 10 to 15 years.
	——Jack Seward, 米 (An American's America)
23)	Scholastic Aptitude Test scores <u>have fallen</u> 49 points in verbal aptitude and 31 points in math in
	the past 20 years. ——(Psychology Today, 米, 1983)
24)	The Japanese are, by and large, a healthy people. However, this uniform good health <u>has</u> only
	come about in the past 40 years or so. ——Mallory Fromm, 英 (The Culture of Language)
25)	As we discussed in chapter 7, in the past four hundred years, a new force <u>has arisen</u> .
	——PaulStapleton 米 (New Perspectives)
26)	In the past few years museums <u>have "come</u> alive" in America.
	——Alison R. Lanier, 米 (Living in the U.S.A.)
27)	New technology <u>has taken</u> us in the past few years from deep into the far reaches of space to
	deep within the human brain ——VOA * (Science in Your Life)

28)	In the past couple of years a number of new journalist works <u>have enjoyed</u> critical and popular
	successes. ——Jim Knudsen, 米 (Deep into America)
•	N+in the past years (1)
29)	Any discussion of improvements in technology in the past five years also must include the
	Hubble Space Telescope. ——(VOA, Science in Your Life)
[in	the last years/decade (in perfect tense) (5)]
•	in the last years (in perfect tense) (2)
30)	in the last few years, there has been a significant erosion of American goodwill toward Japan.
	——Robert C. Christopher, 米 (The Japanese Mind)
•	in the last years (in past tense) (1)
31)	The thickness of the glacier was reduced by almost 40 feet in the last eight years.
	——John R. brown,米 (Our World Now)
•	in the last decade (in perfect tense) (1)
32)	In the last decade or so, the amount of overtime which many businessmen are expected to do
	has dramatically increased as companies <u>have rationalised and shed</u> workers.
	——Adrian J. Pinnington, 英 (Here and There)
•	N+in the past decade (1)
33)	Damage from the increased use of CFCs in the past decade still has not been felt.
	——(VOA, 米, Special English Feature)
	19.3 for (9)
[for	r the past ~ years/decade/century/minutes (in perfect tense) (5)]
•	for the past years (2)
34)	I have been spending more than half of each year in Japan for the past fifteen years.
	——Donald Keene, 米 (Living in Two Countries)
35)	Organ transplantation has been widely practiced in the West for the past thirty years.
	——John Millen, 英 (Essential English for Medical Students)
•	for the past decades (1)
36)	For the past several decades, Japan has maintained a trade surplus with the United States.
	——Harrison M. Holland, 米 (Understanding America)
•	for the past century or so (1)
37)	It is quite true that for the past quarter century or so Americans in general have looked benignly
	on Japan and the Japanese. ——Robert Christopher, 米 (<i>The Japanese Mind</i>)
•	for the past minutes (1)
38)	'Well.' I said, 'that doesn't matter. We've been speaking Japanese for the past five minutes.'
	——Alan Booth, 英 (A Journey Through Japan)

[for	r the last years/months (in perfect tense) (4)]
•	for the last years (3)
39)	My present home for the last 15 years has been in the principality of Andorra.
	——James Kirkup, 英 (It's A Small World)
40)	For the last two hundred years people speaking with strong regional accents have had to learn
	like Eliza how to speak "good" English if they wanted to succeed in life.
	——George Wallace, 英 (The British Today)
41)	The West Antarctic Ice Sheet has been shrinking for the last twenty years.
	——John R. Brown, 米 (Our World Now)
•	for the last months (1)
42)	Having for the last two months been in the habit of seeing his friend almost daily, he found that
	his present loneliness made him sad. ——Oscar Wilde, 英 (<i>The Happy Prince</i>)
	19.4 over (9)
[ov	er the past years/generations (5)]
•	over the past years (in perfect tense) (4)
43)	College sports <u>have</u> dramatically <u>changed</u> in the United States over the past 30 years.
	——Natalie Reid, 英 (Making Choices)
44)	It is obvious that Japan has changed very profoundly over the past 150 years.
	——Adrian J. Pinnington, 英 (Here and There)
45)	The traditional pattern of family life <u>has been</u> under increasing strain over the past twenty years
	or so.
46)	That is the way of life, or wisdom, to which we have paid so little attention over the past
	hundred years. ——Chris Mosdell, 英 (Society's Storytellers)
•	over the past generations (in present tense) (1)
47)	The Japanese family is still a strong institution in spite of major social change over the past
	four or five generations. ——Harrison M. Holland, 米 (Understanding America)
[ov	er the last years (2)]
•	over the last years (in perfect tense) (2)
48)	We've seen so much of the ecological horrors on our TV screens over the last few years.
	——Jonathon E. Porrilt, 米 (Where on Earth Are We Going?)
49)	Over the last ten years, the opening hours have been longer and longer.
	——Adrian J. Pinnington, 米 (Here and There)
•	over the last years (in present tense) (2)
50)	They discovered that the average American <u>had grown</u> considerably wider in the hips over the
	last fifty years. ——Barbara Seuling 米, (You Can't Sneeze Without Your Eyes Open)

51) The development of large shopping <u>is</u> a recent development and <u>reflects</u> the changing life-style of British people over the <u>last twenty years</u>. ——Adrian J. Pinnington, 米 (*Here and There*)

19.5 まとめ

[A] during (17)

(7) during the past ~ (13) (76.4%)

- during the past year(s) etc. (in perfect tense) (5)(38.5%)
- during the past decade (in perfect tense) (1)(7.7%)
- during the past decade (in past tense) (1)(7.7%)
- during the past centuries (in perfect tense) (1)(7.7%)
- during the past few days (in perfect tense) (1)(7.7%)
- during this past summer (in perfect tense) (1)(7.7%)
- during the past year(s) etc. (in past tense) (3)(23.0%)

(1) during the last \sim years (4)(23.6%)

- during the last years (in perfect tense) (3)(75%)
- during the last twenty years (in past tense) (1)(25%)

(ア)で past/last は 76.4%/23.6%。Perfect Tense は (ア)77%、(イ)75%。Past Tense は(ア)30.70%,(イ)25%だけで、perfect tense が多用されています。(ア)で years 38.5%、decade 15.4%、centuries、days、summer それぞれ 7.7%。(イ)では years のみで minutes、weeks、fortnights、months が 1 例も見あたりません。算用数字は非常に少なく、during the past 20 years、during the past 30 years、during the 40 years の 3 例。17 例中 17.7%にすぎません。

[B] in (17)

(\mathcal{T}) in the past years (12)(70.5%)

- in the past years (in perfect tense) (11)(91.7%)
- N+ in the past years (1)(8.3%)

(1) in the last years/decade (in perfect tense) (5)(29.5%)

- in the last years (in perfect tense) (2)(40%)
- in the last years (in past tense] (1)(20%)
- in the last decade (in perfect tense) (1)(20%)
- N+in the last decade (1)(20%)

17 例の中 in the last ~は decade の 2 例 (13%)だけでその他はすべて in the past ~形である。すべてが years と decade(ただし 2 例のみ)でその他のものはない。この句の特色といえる。 (ア)の 2 例目、(イ)の 3 例目以外の 15 例はすべて perfect tense である。算用数字を用いたものは in the past 10 to 15 years、in the past 20 years、in the past 40 years or so の 3 例 (17.7%)で during のケースと同数で極めて少数である。

[C] for (9)

- (\mathcal{T}) for the past ~ years/decade/century/minutes (in perfect tense) (5)(55.6%)
 - for the past years (2)(40%)
 - for the past decades (1)(20%)
 - for the past century or so (1)(20%)
 - for the past minutes (1)(20%)
- (1) for the last years/months (in perfect tense) (4)(44.4%)
 - for the last years (3)(75%)
 - for the last months (1)(25%)

for the past ~ 5 例、for the last ~ 4 例で、双方拮抗している。for the past decades、for the past century or so、for the past minutes、for the last two months の 4 例は years の 5 例に拮抗している。他の[A][B][D]の years の有利性とは対照的である。perfect tense のみであるのも特異である。 算用数字は for the last 15 years に 1 例のみ

[D] over (9)

- (7) over the past years/generations (5)(55.6%)
 - over the past years (in perfect tense) (4)(80%)
 - over the past generations (in present tense) (1)(20%)
- (\checkmark) over the last years (4)(44.4%)
 - over the last years (in perfect tense) (2)(50%)
 - over the last years (in present tense) (2)(50%)

past 5 例、last 4 例であり、[C]と同じである。 present tense が 3 例あるが、やはり perfect tense の優位性は変わらない。

[A][B][C][D]はいずれも past が多用されていてこの句の特性を表している。下記の文でも past が 先に記されている。

52) It is quite true that <u>for the past quarter century or so</u> Americans in general have looked benignly on Japan and the Japanese. But <u>in the last few years</u> there has been a significant erosion of American goodwill toward Japan.

——Robert Christopher, 米 (The Japanese Mind)

算用数字は over the past 30 years、over the past 150 years の 2 例のみ。

[52 例ジャンル別の数]

- during (17), in (17), for (9), over (9),
- past (35)、last (17) ※前者は7割弱
- perfect tense (41), present tense (3), past tense (6), future tense (0)
- progress form (0)、future perfect tense (0)、N+ in the past years (2)
 ※perfect Tense は4割強。past tense、present tense がつづく。

● 算用数字 (9)

(参考『ジーニアス英和辞典・第4版』について)

during の項 語法 (1)

during the last [past, next] two years のいずれも可、とあるが用例の記載はない。

in の項

前3 [時] a) [期間]…のうちに、…の間に(◆通例 in はある幅のある期間を、at は時の 1 点を示す; ただし、この用法の in は「…のある時に」(→during 2 で期間内の1地点を表す)(→in the NIGHT)、 とあります。また in the last years はあるが in the past years, etc.の文例は見当たりません。ほとんどが adverb phrase としてつかわれいますが in the past ~の場合、下記 2 例のように Adjective Phrase として使用されることもあります。このことを言及した辞典に接した記憶はありません。

53) Damage from the increased use of CFCs in the past decade still has not been felt.

——VOA, ★ (Special English Feature)

54) Any discussion of improvements in technology in the past five years also must include the Hubble Space Telescope.

——VOA (Science in Your Life)

for の項

前 8 語法(2) [特定の期間をさす場合の for] a) 原則として for は不可:ただし past、coming、following、next、last などや序数詞で限定されている場合は for も可(→during 2)とありますが、用例の記載されていません。

over の項

前 7 [時間・時の経過] …の間(ずっと)、…にわたって;が終わるまで ◆時間の経過を表して特定の時期を示す語と用いられることが多い、とあり over ~ the past five years she has become more and more rational.が例示されているが、わたしのコーパスでは for 同様数は少ないが、原則として for と類似の特性があるのではないでしょうか。

いずれの場合も perfect tense の中で使用されるケースが多く year(s), decade(s)の出現が多いがそのことの記述が見当たらない。他に century、centuries、generations、days、months、weeksminutes、summer などの存在も付加したらどうであろうか。

このイデオムに限らず算用数字の使用は極めて少ない。ここでは9例だけです。

20 形態別 between/betwixt/ in between の諸相

Randolph Quirk et al: *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language* (1985, p. 886)に preposition 'between'支配の O は、Time、Relation、Time に限定されるとある。

20.1 BETWEEN

[BETWEEN+A型]

•	A(=複数名詞)
1)	That year, it was in 1891, we got next to nothing —hardly a boat-load of herring between a

That year, it was in 1891, we got next to nothing —hardly a boat-load of herring between all the twenty-odd boats, ... ——Stephen Southwold, 英 (Sailor George's Tales) (20 あまりの漁船総がかりでほとんど漁船一杯のニシンも取れなかった。)

2)	I never sleep so soundly anywhere as here. You will sleep between sheets.
	——William S. Maugham, 英 (Of Human Bondage)
3)	He lifted her from that seat of humiliation and took her, wavering between his supporting hands
	to be a low chair beside the coal grate. ——Willa Cather. 米 (<i>The Old Beauty</i>)

4) It's always tea-time, and we've no time to wash the things between whiles.

——Lewis Carroll, 英 (*Alice at a tea party*)

- A(=複数人称代名詞)
- 5) "Between us, we make a lot of money, Authur," she said. "Let's move to Long Island."

——John Dennis, 米 (Stories Behind English)

6) The constraints serve, I believe, to reinforce other important aspects of the Japanese character: tribal values, Confucian ethics and a heavy emphasis hierarchy and loyalty stemming from the fact that feudalism survived in Japan until little more than a century ago. Between them, all these factors have produced a society in which the individual's responsibility to the group assumes a preeminence it does not have in any Occidental nation.

——Robert C. Christopher, 米 (*The Japanese Mind*) (そういった要素を一つ一つ結びつけて)

7) Notice that in talking about American schools, we have to qualify <u>statements</u> with words such as "often" and "usually" because there's so much **between them**.

——Peter Weld, 英 (Facing the Future)

(ここだけの話だが)

- \bullet A (=two)
- 8) If this expectation is correct, we have to choose, within the next fifty years or so, between two alternatives. ——Bertrand Russell, 英 (*The Impact of Science on Society*) (2 つの中のどちらかを選ぶ)

9)	I am always being asked, and I am always asking myself, what the chief differences are
- /	between life on the two sides of the Pacific.
10)	——Edward Seidensticker, 米 (Japanese and Americans)
10)	In other words, I think there had to be a balance between the two approaches, as between two
	sexes. ——Peter Milward, 英 (Invitation to Intellectual Life)
•	A (=three)
11)	A muller, dying, divided all his property between his three children.
	——Charles Perrault (<i>Puss in Boots</i>)
12)	He was almost inclined to pity the rascally Yu who had to keep the peace between three warring
	women. ——William S. Maugham, 英 (<i>The Consul</i>)
	(敵対する3人の女性の間に波風のたたぬように)
13)	G. P. Krapp, author of two standard works on American pronunciation, declared that it is
	possible to make clear distinctions between just three areas: he distinguished Eastern, Western
	and Southern speech. ——Vanessa Hardy, 英 (Separate and Equal)
•	between (副詞)
14)	Foreign cars, although much coveted, are few and far between in the streets of Japan.
	——George Mikes 洪牙利 (The Land of the Rising Yen: Japan)
жv	Vebster's Unabridged Dictionary (1999)
	in the intervening space or time; in an intermediate position or relation: two windows with a
	r between; visits that were far between
	ETWEEN+A+AND+B型]
•	A、B とも名詞または名詞相当語句
	A Abort to any and the transit
15)	
15)	There would certainly have been strife between my husband and I.
	Toshiko Marks (Double Vision)
	※この例は文法的には間違いだが、口語体としては許容されていると云われている。正式に
	は "between and me"
	A、B ともに主格の人称代名詞
16)	There is a pervasive, exclusive notion of "we Japanese" that draws a firm line between "we"
	and "they." ——Richard Goodman, 米 (Shadows of the Rising Sun)
	※we(=見方)、they(=敵)。このようにコロンで囲んだ主格は文法書に説かれていないので
	はなかろうか。
	A、B ともに数字
17)	Between 1000 and 1066, 25 new monasteries were build in Normandy.
	——John Foster, 英 (<i>The Normans</i>)
18)	These houses were known as long houses and were between 12 and 30 metres long.

	——Ibid.
19)	Between then and 1933, the only drinks in town were illegal.
	——Tad Tuleia,米 (Fabulous Fallacies)
	A、B ともに名詞
20)	They can fly between Tokyo and Beijing in about two hours.
	——New Crown English Series 2
21)	He found him standing, embarrassed, halfway between the bed and the door.
	——J. D. Salinger, 米 (For Esme with Love and Squalor)
22)	Those stories generally contained some little hints that were instructive to me, and which l
	greatly stood in want of; for, between indulgence and neglect, I had many faulty ways.
	(New English Readings (Revised) 2)
	(甘やかしやら、放っておかれるやらで)
	A、B ともに名詞句
23)	Supposing that one can, is there any genuine continuity between the England of to-day and the
	England of the past? ——George Orwell, 英 (The English People)
24)	We therefore investigated the association between self-reported physical activity both during
	leisure and work and the subsequent risk of colorectal cancer in a population-based, prospective
	study among both sexes. ——(British Journal of Cancer, 1996)
25)	On seeing this, I went down the hill by a short cut, and coming between the man running away
	and the two pursuers, I called loudly to the first.
	——Daniel Defoe, 英 (Robinson Crusoe)
	(逃げてゆく者と2人の追い手の間に出て)
26)	Generally that year my speeches shared a common theme: the correlation between Japan's (and
	Korea's) primacy in education and their industrial success (and conversely, the correlation
	between low test scores and lack of productivity and economic health).
	——David Halberstam, 米 (The Next Century)
	▶ A(=名詞)、B (=名詞句)
27)	Nothing in the world but the love of beauty in its broad sense stands between Man and the full
	and reckless exercise of his competitive appetites. ——J. Galsworthy, 英 (Castles in Spain)
	▶ A (=名詞句)、B(=副詞)
28)	There's a respectable gap between the silver porringer and spoon I gave you when you were

- 28) There's a respectable gap between the silver porringer and spoon I gave you when you were baptized and today. ——Eden Phillpotts, 英 (*Peacock House*) ※破格構文 between の後に in those days that を補う。
 - ▶ A (=名詞節)、B(=名詞句)
- 29) I do not mean by humility, doubt of his own power, or hesitation of speaking his opinions, but a right understanding of the relation between what he can do and say, and the rest of the world's

A、B ともに名詞節 30) A book of physiology by Thomas H. Huxley awoke him to the disparity between what the book said about this functioning of the human mind and body and what he had been taught out of the family Bible. —H. Hagedorn (*Americans*) ※24)、26)、27)~30)の名詞句は、~ and ~から成り立っているが、この and は between A and B の and とは異なる。文法書でこのことに触れたものはほとんど無い。 A=B ともに同一名詞 31) Newcomers to England are still astonished and sometimes horrified by the blatant differences between class and class. ——George Orwell, 英 (The English People) ※この例も文法書にあるのを見た覚えがない。 between A and B(=主語) 32) Between four hundred and five hundred men were employed on each side of the mountain. —Norman Wymer,英 (Man Against Nature) ※between ~ hundred は一つの数字を表していて men を修飾している。 $A \setminus B \geq t \setminus (\sim ing+N)$ 33) Like so much else in Japan, things can change completely in the short time between finishing an article and seeing it in print. —Herbert Passin, 米 34) To put the matter differently, there was always an alternative. There was a choice between cultivating the old plot, with improvements and refinements, and making it over into something quit new. ——Edward Seidensticker, 米 (Japanese and Americans) 35) She had so little money she often was forced to choose between buying books and buying food. —Virginia Coigney (Who Did It?) 36) I hate the idea of dying for cause, and if I had to choose between betraying my country and betraying my friend, I hope I should have the guts to betray my country. ——E. M. Forster 37) There is a big difference between pointing out racial differences such as a big -nosed pink foreigners and delicate Japanese and calling this fact of mother nature a "complex". -Caroline Dale, 英 (*My Culture Shock*) 38) It is a good example, however, of the difference between knowing a language because you have learnt it at school or from books and really living a language. —Adrian J. Pinnington, 英 (*Inside Out*) ※between ~ing の用例はOALD (6)(2000)に Between working full-time and taking care of the kids, he didn't have much time for hobbies. LAAD (1)(2000)[[between doing] Students alternated between scribbling notes and standing before the class giving reports.とある。しかし 現行の英和辞典でこの用法を教えている辞典は少ない。特に between ~ing はどもかく、+ Nの 用例を載せたものは案外に少ない。私の場合はすべて between ~ing+N のみで between ~ing

-A. G. Gardiner, 米 (Leaves in the Wind)

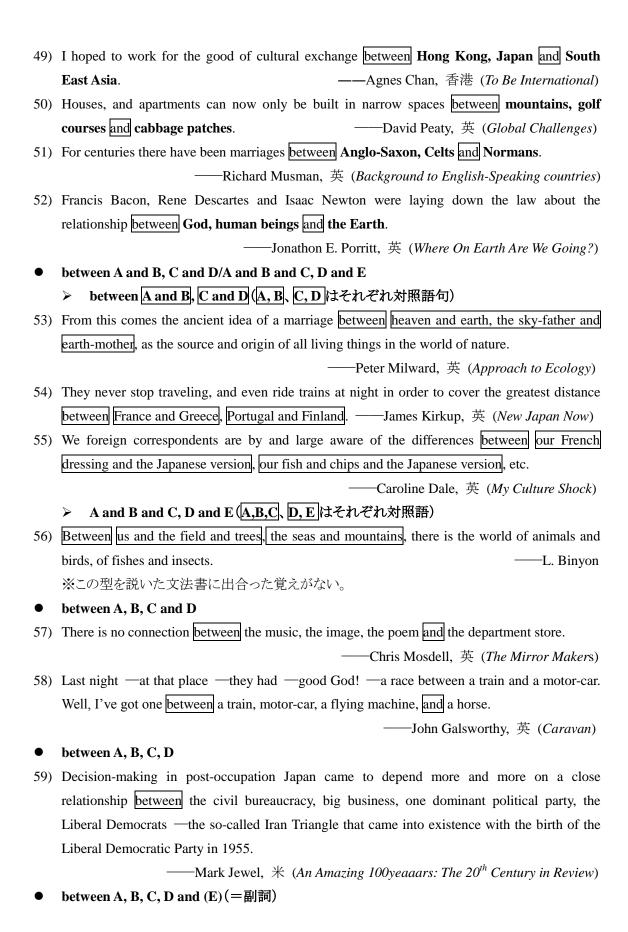
sayings and doings.

が1例も無い。これは一般的実態の1面を表しているのではなかろうか。

• between A and B and C/between A B and C

	between A and B and C
39)	He's standing between you and Fletcher and Wilson this minute.
	——Jack Schaefer, 米 (Shane)
40)	The Tatemae/hone system often becomes a crucial factor in encounters between Japanese
	businessman and politicians and their Western counterparts.
	——Boye Lafayette De Mente, 米 (Japan's Cultural Code Words)
41)	There is comedy in the contrast between children and the grave parts they play and the grave
	speeches they utter as abbesses, poets, and harpers. ——Robert Lynd, 英 (Blue Lion)
	between A B (= and ~) and C
42)	Down below, drawn on the rock, are hundreds of lines, shapes and figuresHe asked the
	computer if there was any relationship between the lines and the rising and setting of the sun
	and the patterns of the stars. ——Anthony Bloomfield, 英 (The Great Unknown)
	※the lines and the rising and setting of the sun/to the patterns of the stars はそれぞれ $A=$ 「地
	上に描かれた線」、 $\mathbf{B} = \lceil \mathbf{H} \mathbf{O} \mathbf{H}$ 、 \mathbf{H} 没」、 $\mathbf{C} = \lceil \mathbf{E} \mathbf{O} \mathbf{H}$ 態」を意味していて、 \mathbf{B} には and が挿入
	されているが、of the sunがhe rising and settingを修飾している名詞句で一つのクラスターをな
	している。
•	between A, B, and C/between A, B and C
	▶ between A, B, and C (and の前にコンマあり)
43)	Between the radio, video, and various other electronic aids, you are can develop your ability to
	comprehend English by air. ——Adrian J. Pinnington, 英 (Inside out)
44)	While some spoke of the "end of history" and a victory for liberal democracy, others warned of
	a "Clash of civilization" between the democracies, Islamic countries, and China.
	——Mark Jewel, 米 (An Amazing 100 years: A 20 th Century in Review)
45)	Most dormitory floors look like the floors of large hotels, with a central hallway between the
	dorm rooms, showers, and toilets. ——Natalie Reid, 米 (Making Choices)
46)	The story of differences between American, Russian, and Indian society as a whole may well
	turn out to be the best way of studying differences between individual Americans, Russians,
	and Indians. ——Edward Hallet Carr, 米 (What is History?)
	▶ between A, B and C (and の前にコンマなし)
47)	The Queen's English, Oxford English or even BBC English signal the historical connection
	between social class, education and language.
	——Vanessa Hardy, 英 (Separate and EqualBritish English and American English)
48)	The line between accent, dialect and language is often unsure, unsteady or disputed, so we

have preferred to use the word varieties. ——R. McCrumm, et al., 英 (*The Story of English*)



60)	Important documents pass between New York city, Moscow, London, Paris, and around the
	world every second. ——Voice of America, ★ (Science in Your Life)
	※around the world every second は「毎秒ごと、頻繁に世界中で」
[BF	ETWEEN+A+OR+B 型(either A or B との混交)]
•	between A or B
61)	You must choose between he-his-him-his or she-her-hers.
	——Ronald Wardhaugh, 英 (Language in Society)
62)	Communication begins with contact established between two or more people.
	——Agnes Chan,香港 (To Be International)
63)	Men did not rise from the ranks in those days, but I was favoured and given the choice between
	the new Victoria Cross, won in the mutiny, or a commission.
	——Eden Phillpotts, 英 (Peacock House)
64)	If you want to rent a car in the UK or the U.S. there is a wide variety of options open to you.
	You can choose between a luxury limousine of a basic mini and there is a whole range in
	between. ——James House 米 (Get it! Use it!)
•	between A ing or B ing
65)	Politicians of the Left are therefore aware —or have recently become aware that once in power
	they choose between abandoning some of their principles or lowering the English standard
	of living. ——George Orwell, 英 (The Conservative Party and the Labour Party)
	(原則のいくつかを放棄するか生活水準を下げる)
•	between A ing or B
66)	You will have to choose between hiring a Japanese or an American to be your representative in
	Japan. ——Jack Seward, 米 (On Japan Again)
67)	Regardless of that, Vick always made up for the disputed decision by favoring the other the next
	time he had a chance to make a close choice between calling a base runner safe or out.
	——Erskine. Caldwell, 米 (The Good of the Game)
•	between ~ing A and ~ing B or ~ing C
68)	We have a choice between protecting our environment and doing something to combat the
	greenhouse effect or creating more road space for more and more cars.
	——Early Times, 英 (Environmentally Yours)
[be	tween+A+to+B 型(from A to B との混交)]
69)	Ideally, a person should take in between 25 to 30 grams of dietary fiber each day.
	——JoAnn Parochetti, 米 (Ecology and Business)

20.2 BETWIXT

[betwixt]

70)	"I am a man of my word," said Lopake. "And here is the money betwixt us."
	——Robert L. Stevenson, 英 (<i>The Bottle Imp</i>)
	(さあ金は2人の間に置いた)
71)	Each would sunder the other and sit in opposite balconies with the whole width of the Bright
	House betwixt. ——Ibid.
	(この広いひかり屋敷を間において)
	※betwixt は古風で詩で用いるといわれているが、Webster's Unabridged Dictionary に Chiefly
	South Midland and Southern U.S. between.とある。私のコーパスでは 1 世紀前のこの
	Stevenson の文だけである。
[be	twixt and between(どっちつかず)]
72)	So now for me my fellow-Englishmen may be regarded on the antipodes of the Northern
	hemisphere. Or rather, I find myself caught, as we say, "betwixt and between", a quaint
	expression which is defined in my Oxford dictionary as "in an intermediation position, neither
	one thing nor the other". It is almost what we in Japan call "chuto hanpa" —but not quite.
	——Peter Milward, 英 (Cultures in ContrastEngland and Japan)
	※LDCE にあるこの句の用例をあとにコピーした。
	20.3 IN (-) BETWEEN
[in-	-between (= 名詞)]
73)	"At the Foreign Press Center we work as the in-between," she said.
	——Christine Chapman, 米 (Today's Youth)
	(中間者)
[in	(-) between (= 形容詞)]
74)	We come in all size and shapes: tall, short, and in between. ——Peter Spier (<i>People</i>)
75)	The Shadow of examinations hangs over a good deal of his life, turning everything, work and
	what should be play as well, into an in-between region.
	——Edward Seidensticker, 米 (Japanese and Americans)
	(中間地帯)
76)	It seemed that everyone I met was speaking either on more formal or less formal level than the
ŕ	"in-between" polite Japanese language I had studied.
	——William Currie, 米(Light Essays 21)
[in	(-) between (= 副詞句)]
77)	Here, as in Canada, we find the Rocky Mountains and the Coast Ranges. The Sierra Nevada,
	running from north-west to southeast, is in between.
	——Grolier, 米 (The Book of knowledge)
78)	They may be looked on as roughly representative of the two ends of a scale, the one marked

	'science' and the other, 'art', with every day use of language coming <u>in between</u> .
	——C. K. Ogden (Basic English for Science)
79)	Americans seem to be eating all the time: at least three enormous meals a day, with by big
	snacks in-between and chocolate cake and milk just before bed.
	——Jim Knudsen, 米 (American Insight)
80)	The debate brings up many moral and philosophical question. When does life actually begin?
	At conception! At birth? Somewhere in between!
	——Jim Knudsen, 米 (American Insights)
81)	That is one phase of Japanese culture too, and productions of the works of western playwrights
	from Sophocles to Pinter (and everybody important in between) are available in abundance.
	——William Currie, 米 (<i>The Play's the Thing</i>)
82)	Then there was the golf and the land boom. Accompanying all that was the Tanaka boom of
	1972, followed very quickly by the anti-Tanaka mood of 1974. In between we saw the oil shock
	and the toilet-paper panic. ——Gregory Clark, 英 (Understanding the Japanese)
83)	If you want to rent a car in the UK or the U.S. there is a wide variety of options open to you.
	You can choose between a luxury limousine or a basic mini and there is a whole range in
	between. ——James House, 米 (Get it! Use it!)
[in	between+A (= 副詞句)]
•	A (= 複数名詞)
84)	In between spells of work at the table, I can pace up and down
	——J. B. Priestley, 米 (Rain upon Godshill)
	(仕事の合間に)
85)	Over and in between the roots lay a soft carpet of green grass,
	——Peter Milward, 英 (A Country Diary in Tokyo)
86)	British factory workers do short ten-minute bursts of work in between tea-breaks.
	——Russell Barnes, 英 (What's New in Britain)
•	A (= two)
	> A (= two)
87)	Beyond the Aloha Tower lay the long, high plateau of Diamond Head, and in between these
	two landmarks, still out of sight, was the famous Waikiki Beach with its grand new luxury
	hotels, sailing clubs and cafes. ——James Kirkup, 英 (My Three Countries)
88)	Wedged in between these two fat old women, the Frau had no hope of being asked to dance.
	Katherine Mansfield, ニュージーランド (Frau Brechenmacher, Attends)
	(太った2人の老婦人の間に押し込められて)
89)	In between the two armies was a valley, where they met in battle each day.
	——Willa Fogle, 米 (Stories from the Old Testament)

\rightarrow A(=two of ~, and ~)

90) In between the two extremes of extraordinarily talented children who can educate themselves even without formal schooling, and children who derive no benefit from schooling because of their violent or lazy disposition are most children.

——Donald Keene, 米 (*Living in Two Countries*)

[in between+A+and+B(=副詞句)、A,B(=名詞、名詞句)]

- A,B(=名詞)
- 91) In between silence and speech lies vagueness for which the Japanese clearly have a liking.

——Jack Seward, # (The Americans and the Japanese)

92) The Israelites were hemmed in between the mountains and sea, with no way of escape.

——Willa Fogle, 米 (Stories from the Old Testament)

- A, B(=名詞句)
- 93) Prices are always on the rise, but wages do not rise in proportion to prices. In between the rise of the one and the fall of the other it is the poor who suffer, the little people who have to do the dirty jobs no one else wants to do.

-----Peter Milward, 英 (*Happenings and Non-Happenings*) (物価の高騰やら賃金の下落やらで)

- 94) My own conception of "home" is something in between the noisy bustle of London and the empty spaces of the north.

 ——Ibid. (The British and the Japanese)
- 95) In between the green of the campus behind me and the clouds over Sakurajima before me there stretched a jungle of ugly concrete apartment buildings.

——Ibid. (A Country Diary in Tokyo)

[in between ~ing+A+and ~ing+B(=副詞句)、A, B(=名詞)]

96) In between working the lift and announcing the floors, the lift girl was giving her friend an account of something that had happened the previous evening.

——Alan Turney, 英 (Japan: A World of Difference)

(参考)

- Webster's Unabridged Dictionary (sb. between) (1999)(CD-ROM)
 - —**Usage.** AMONG expresses a relationship when more than two persons or things are involved: *Distrust spread among even his strongest supporters*. BETWEEN is used when only two persons or things are involved: *between you and me; to decide between tea and coffee*. BETWEEN also continues to be used, as it has been throughout its entire history, to express a relationship of persons or things considered individually, no matter how many: *Tossing up coins between three people always takes a little working out. Between holding public office, teaching, and writing, she has little free time*.

Although not generally accepted as good usage, BETWEEN YOU AND I is heard occasionally

in the speech of educated persons. By the traditional rules of grammar, when a pronoun is the object of a preposition, that pronoun should be in the objective case: between you and me; between her and them. The use of the nominative form (I, he, she, they, etc.) arises partly as overcorrection, the reasoning being that if it is correct at the end of a sentence like It is I, it must also be correct at the end of the phrase BETWEEN YOU AND The choice of pronoun also owes something to the tendency for the final pronoun in a compound object to be in the nominative case after a verb: It was kind of you to invite my wife and I. This too is not generally regarded as good usage.

The construction BETWEEN EACH (or EVERY) is sometimes objected to on the grounds that BETWEEN calls for a plural or compound object. However, the construction is old and fully standard when the sense indicates that more than one thing is meant: *Spread softened butter between each layer of pastry. There were marigolds peeking between every row of vegetables.* The construction BETWEEN ... TO is a blend of BETWEEN ... AND (*between 15 and 25 miles*) and FROM ... TO (*from 15 to 25 miles*). It occurs occasionally in informal speech but not in formal speech or writing.

■ Cambridge Advanced Learner's Dictionary (2003)(CD-ROM)

betwixt OLD USE

betwixt and between between two positions, choices or ideas and unable or unwilling to decide between

■ Longman Dictionary of Contemporary English (4) (2004)(CD-ROM)

betwixt and between

old-fashioned not quite belonging to one group or to another (例文)

- Although the process has not turned them into ordinary men they have, in some degree, become betwixt and between.
- Both are figures caught betwixt and between, either compromised or radicalized by virtue of being women within a culture.
- They reported feelings of marginality, of being betwixt and between.
- Although the process has not turned them into ordinary men they have, in some degree, become betwixt and between.
- Both are figures caught betwixt and between, either compromised or radicalized by virtue of being women within a culture.
- They reported feelings of marginality, of being betwixt and between.

between you and me

- Between you and me, I don't think she has a chance of getting that promotion.
- Between you and me, I think Elizabeth is a bit of a nightmare, etc. Sentences from books,

newspapers, etc.

- But between you and me he's really past it.
- But just between you and me and a few hundred miles, thoughts of ancient spirits still trail closely behind.
- C'mon, secretly just between you and me the voice persisted in her head, it would be hard not to.
- I wanted everything to start afresh between you and me.
- In fact, between you and me, I think she's relieved.
- Look, Miranda, he said, those twenty long years that lie between you and me.

In-between

in the middle between two points, sizes, periods of time etc (例文)

- She was at that in-between age, neither a girl nor a woman.
- Oxford Advanced Learner's Dictionary (6) (2000)

In between

In the space or period of time separating two or more points, objects etc. or two dates, events, etc

(例文)

- The house was near a park but there was a road in between.
- I see her most week-ends but not very often in between.